





Doctor Unruly

Table of Contents

- 1. [One](#)
- 2. [part 1](#)
- 3. [part 2](#)
- 4. [Three](#)
- 5. [Four](#)
- 6. [Five](#)
- 7. [part 1](#)
- 8. [part 2](#)
- 9. [part 1](#)
- 10. [part 2](#)
- 11. [part 1](#)
- 12. [part 2](#)
- 13. [part 1](#)
- 14. [part 2](#)
- 15. [part 3](#)
- 16. [part 1](#)
- 17. [part 2](#)
- 18. [part 1](#)
- 19. [part 2](#)
- 20. [Twelve](#)
- 21. [part 1](#)
- 22. [part 2](#)
- 23. [part 1](#)
- 24. [part 2](#)
- 25. [part 1](#)
- 26. [part 2](#)

27. [Sixteen](#)
28. [Seventeen](#)
29. [part 1](#)
30. [part 2](#)
31. [Nineteen](#)
32. [part 1](#)
33. [part 2](#)
34. [Twenty-One](#)
35. [Twenty-Two](#)
36. [Twenty-Three](#)
37. [Twenty-Four](#)
38. [part 1](#)
39. [part 2](#)
40. [part 1](#)
41. [part 2](#)
42. [Twenty-Seven](#)
43. [Twenty-Eight](#)
44. [Twenty-Nine](#)
45. [Thirty](#)
46. [Thirty-One](#)
47. [Thirty-Two](#)
48. [Thirty-Three](#)
49. [part 1](#)
50. [part 2](#)
51. [part 1](#)
52. [part 2](#)
53. [Thirty-Six](#)
54. [part 1](#)
55. [part 2](#)
56. [part 1](#)
57. [part 2](#)
58. [Thirty-Nine](#)
59. [Forty](#)
60. [part 1](#)

61. [part 2](#)
62. [Forty-Two](#)
63. [part 1](#)
64. [part 2](#)
65. [Forty-Four](#)
66. [Forty-Five](#)
67. [part 1](#)
68. [part 2](#)
69. [part 1](#)
70. [part 2](#)
71. [Forty-Eight](#)
72. [Forty-Nine](#)
73. [part 1](#)
74. [part 2](#)
75. [Fifty-One](#)
76. [Fifty-Two](#)
77. [Fifty-Three](#)
78. [Fifty-Four](#)
79. [Fifty-Five](#)
80. [Fifty-Six](#)
81. [part 1](#)
82. [part 2](#)
83. [Fifty-Eight](#)
84. [Fifty-Nine](#)
85. [Sixty](#)
86. [Sixty-One](#)
87. [part 1](#)
88. [part 2](#)
89. [Sixty-Three](#)
90. [part 1](#)
91. [part 2](#)
92. [Side Story Two](#)
93. [Side Story Three](#)
94. [Side Story Four](#)

One

DU – Chapter One

At Na Na's college of nursing, a few nursing professors gathered in the faculty room to chew on melon seeds and discuss the new crop of nursing graduates.

'I feel that Na Na genuinely loves nursing unlike most nursing graduates. Put aside her airy-fairy aura, I think she'll be a 'little angel soldier' who patients will feel safe sleeping at night knowing they are under good nursing care,' the head nursing professor said.

A nursing professor who sat next to the head nursing professor, immediately agreed. 'That's right, she doesn't just have wings. Her kind of wings are the long-term endurance kind.'

Everyone in the faculty room chewed melon seeds and nodded their heads at the same time. They all felt that Na Na was like a healthy ox who was hard working and sincere, which was why they played favourites and recommended Na Na for internships at good city hospitals.

What kind of nursing graduate wasn't happy to be sent to a good city hospital for an internship... it was Na Na.

Na Na declined her nursing professors' good intentions. She packed her suitcase and accepted an internship at a remote rural medical clinic – no other nursing graduate wanted to accept an internship there before Na Na. Every day she followed two elderly doctors to hike up and down mountain terrains to help examine patients.

The two elderly doctors gave Na Na a glowing performance review that outshone the crop of nursing graduates Na Na belonged to.

But Na Na's fellow graduates gossiped behind Na Na's back, they said that Na Na was a fool. Because within one short year Na Na transformed from a snow white girl into an 'antique' and they felt a good natural smooth complexion was wasted on a fool like Na Na.

Soon after Na Na's internship ended, her exemplary diligence paid off and

many prestigious city hospitals all wanted her to apply for a nursing officer position at their hospital.

In the modern era any graduate from the health field that didn't belong to families with influential medical connections then it was hard for them to be offered jobs at prestigious hospitals.

That was why Na Na became her fellow graduates' jealousy target. They couldn't believe the same Na Na they thought was a fool, easily landed a nursing officer position at their dream hospital.

At the hospital it was mandatory for new nursing graduates like new doctor graduates to be trained and rotated through different departments in their probation year working at the hospital. After their first year their supervisors would evaluate and arrange which medical department they were suitable to specialise in or to terminate their contract if their performance at the hospital was poor.

Na Na waited more than half a year and finally she was rotated to the neurology department!

The moment Na Na's best friend and housemate Mao Dan, who was an obstetric nurse received the news that Na Na was going to be breathing in the same room as Mao Dan's idol – Doctor Shi. Mao Dan shrieked and gripped Na Na's hands.

Na Na was in a different mood when she arrived home, she was drained from the daily hustle and bustle of work life and from the extra pressure of the tensed life and death atmosphere at the hospital. But Na Na was curious why Mao Dan who specialised in the obstetric ology department was obsessed with a doctor from a different department.

'Who's Doctor Shi?' Na Na asked.

Mao Dan gave Na Na a condescending look, Mao Dan couldn't believe Na Na didn't know anything about Mao Dan's idol. 'Doctor Shi is a neurosurgeon, he's only thirty-one years old!'

Whilst Mao Dao was daydreaming, Na Na quietly retrieved her hands from Mao Dan's bear grip.

Mao Dan snapped out of her daydream, gripped Na Na's hands again and forced Na Na to listen to Mao Dan's demand. 'My dearest Na Na, you have to take as many photos of the handsome Doctor Shi as possible for me, the more the better... if I'm satisfied with the photos, I'll treat you two meals!'

Na Na didn't think carefully before she happily agreed – free two meals!

Mao Dan was immersed in her thoughts about Dr Shi and she found it hard to escape his allure. Mao Dan forced Na Na's ears to listen to Dr Shi's life story.

'Doctor Shi is the hospital's darling jewel. He's beautiful as a flower. His medical knowledge and surgical skills are vast and profound so it's not a surprise that he earned the head neurosurgeon position at the hospital at such a young age,' Mao Dan said.

Na Na silently imprinted Dr Shi's name in her heart.

At night Na Na couldn't sleep, perhaps because of Mao Dan's excessive praise of Dr Shi's neurosurgical talent or perhaps it was because of the special task of secretly taking photos of Dr Shi. Na Na's curiosity was stirred nonstop and she tossed and turned on her bed more than half the night. Na Na didn't know when she fell asleep, but when she woke up she was going to be late on her first day training in the neurology department at the hospital.

Fortunately for Na Na she lived in a building accommodation provided by the hospital, which was located directly behind the hospital and it only took five minutes to walk to the hospital. Na Na didn't have time to eat breakfast, she rushed to wash her face, brushed her teeth, changed clothes and sprinted to work.

The hospital Na Na worked for was a renowned hospital so naturally it attracted a lot of patients. Every day before sunlight there were many patients already waiting at each of the hospital department's reception area for their appointment to see medical specialists. Amongst those medical specialists were good doctors that were hard to get an appointment with due to high demand of their time, but there were also some doctors who prioritised patients who were able to fork out a few thousand dollars.

So when Na Na arrived at the lobby of the neurology department, the elevators were packed with people and outside the elevators there was also a

crowd of people waiting for the next available elevator.

Na Na didn't want to be late so she sprinted to the elevators restricted for the hospital staff. She still waited a while before she entered an elevator. A trembling elderly man entered the elevator after Na Na, but with the addition of the elderly man the number of people inside the elevator exceeded the maximum capacity and the elevator doors refused to close.

It was obvious to everyone in the staff elevator that the elderly man waited a long time outside the public elevators and he entered the staff elevator because there was no room in the public elevators. The elderly man leaned on a cane and his body condition was poor. But the elderly man heard the elevator's maximum capacity overload warning and had no intention of stepping outside the staff elevator. No one in the staff elevator had the heart to kick the elderly man outside.

At that time it was nearly the start of the morning shift, if any staff got off the elevator and waited for another elevator it was certain that staff member would be late for the morning shift. The hospital senior management were stern and expected all staff to be punctual so there was always a supervisor checking for any staff arriving late. If staff members were late, it was deducted from their hourly salary and they were also scolded by their supervisor so everyone in the staff elevator hesitated to give up their spot for the elderly man.

But if no one stepped out, the elevator wouldn't close and everyone in the elevator would be late.

Time passed and there were murmurs of resentments. The elderly man sighed helplessly, lowered his head, reluctantly leaned on his cane and stepped outside the elevator.

Na Na felt bad for the elderly man and wanted to give up her spot for the elderly man. The moment Na Na was about to step out, a cold male voice behind her gave her a lecture. 'You should know better and not delay everyone's time. You're still young so you shouldn't let the elderly take the stairs.'

The male behind Na Na spoke in a cold voice that wasn't loud or soft, wasn't fast or slow but it was rigid, which made the hot atmosphere in the elevator dropped. His authoritative tone made all the murmurs of resentment stopped

and it became eerily quiet in the elevator.

Everyone's resentful eyes shifted from the elderly man to Na Na. Although Na Na was put in an awkward situation, she wasn't angry.

Na Na knew that she already intended to do a good deed it was just that she wasn't fast enough before she was lectured by a stranger. Under different circumstances she would have let being lectured slide. But Na Na was faced with too many resentful eyes and if she didn't step out of the elevator it'd become a problem for her.

Na Na was innocent but she felt her throat choked.

For Na Na taking the initiative to help an elderly man was noble, but being forced to help was a different situation!

Na Na felt discomfort in her heart, inside her heart she scolded the person who publicly singled her out and shamed her. Na Na couldn't believe such a cold hearted man existed. Why didn't she see him give up his spot for the elderly man? As if the hospital would continue to hire a brazen mouth like his to represent them.

Na Na turned her head around and glared at the cold hearted man but her mouth spoke sweetly. 'As an 'elderly' it's right that you advised someone young like me to exercise. It'll help me condition my body for when I'm old as you. Please excuse me, I'm taking the stairs.'

Na Na's voice was specifically loud when she emphasised the word 'elderly.' The cold hearted man behind Na Na was tall like a power pole. In contrast to him, Na Na was a shrimp. Although she didn't tilt her head back to look at his face, she knew he was a young man. It was clear to everyone that she used his words to mock him.

Na Na lifted her head high and she stepped out of the elevator.

The clock in the lobby was just passed seven in the morning, Na Na didn't dare to delay more time by waiting for the next elevator. She sprinted to the stairs and risked her life to run upstairs.

Finally she reached the seventeenth floor, Na Na was breathless. She leaned against the wall of the staff room and when she sat down she felt like her legs

were going to detached itself from her body.

Na Na was just relieved she wasn't late on her first day at the neurology department.

Na Na found the head nurse Liu Nan and Na Na gave Liu Nan the authorised rotation form. Then Na Na followed a nurse from the night shift into the change room and Na Na changed into a nurse uniform.

Na Na adjusted her nurse uniform, took a deep breath and walked back to the staff room.

No one noticed Na Na arrived so she took the opportunity to assess everyone in the staff room.

Liu Nan looked older than thirty years and was the oldest female in the staff room. Liu Nan's short hair was pinned back behind her ears. Liu Nan was talking with Zhang Wei Dong who was one of the neurology department's directors.

Na Na knew a little about Zhang Wei Dong like he specialised in neuro cases where there was excessive cerebrospinal fluid (CSF) in a patient's brain.

Zhang Wei Dong was almost retiring, his hair was grey, his forehead was high, back hunched, good temperament, he had a booming voice and strangers would have thought he was arguing if they didn't know it was his usual voice.

Na Na saw a man sat in a bright corner of the staff room and he appeared indifferent to everyone in the staff room. He held a cup of coffee in one hand and the other hand flipped through a newspaper. Na Na felt that he somehow looked familiar...

Na Na straightened her back and took a closer look at the man drinking coffee and reading a newspaper.

As though the man sensed Na Na was staring at him, he calmly and slowly raised his head from the newspaper he was reading.

The man's hair was short and revealed a smooth forehead. Na Na felt that he gave off a manly aura. His eyelashes were long and black, above his high straight nose was a pair of glasses. His eyes behind his glasses seemed to match someone with a cold heart and his eyes were sharp as a surgical scalpel.

Shi Dan Ping only casually glanced at Na Na, but it shook her heart to the core. Na Na's heart rang a loud alarm – her heart recognised why he looked familiar.

End Of Chapter One

Related

part 1

DU – Chapter Two (Part 1)

Na Na's heart recognised it was the same cold hearted man who was tall as an electric pole she had the displeasure of meeting in the elevator. It was clear to her that he was the 'elderly' man that caused her to nearly choke on shame in the elevator!

On the wall was a photo of Dr Shi Dan Ping – 'a director of neurology, Bachelor of Medicine, Bachelor of Surgery and Neuroscience Master's Degree.'

Na Na cried without tears. She slowly turned around and smiled brightly at the hospital's darling jewel and handsome young doctor. Her bright smile was more unsightly compared to a teary face.

Shi Dan Ping raised his eyebrows, he glanced indifferently at Na Na and immediately bent his head to continue reading his newspaper. While Na Na's heart mocked her – 'Na Na, you're an unlucky girl!'

Shi Dan Ping was famous in the hospital's surrounding district. He was famous for his poisonous tongue and his sharp eyes weren't too far off from a lit fire. It was a long time since anyone dared to talk back to him the way Na Na did. In the district there was no one who didn't know it was better to sin against the heavens than commit a sin against Shi Dan Ping, otherwise that person would regret being born into the same world as Shi Dan Ping.

So after Na Na's sarcastic words provoked Shi Dan Ping and she stepped out of the elevator, he felt the atmosphere inside the elevator was deadly calm. He didn't expect the gentle little lady would suddenly riot against him, it felt like a gale passed by and followed by a thunder.

When the elevator in the morning finally closed, everyone's eyes looked in Shi Dan Ping's direction.

Shi Dan Ping's face just looked calm. The shiny elevator doors reflected his face, his expensive glasses on his high straight nose and the dangerous cold gleam in his eyes.

Everyone shuddered and immediately averted their eyes from Shi Dan Ping and they looked at the number increasing on top of the elevator doors. Inside their trembling hearts they cursed Na Na – ‘That girl doesn’t know what a blessing is!’

Shi Dan Ping didn’t intend to take revenge on Na Na, although he was slightly humiliated. He considered his status as the head neurosurgeon and the youngest director at the hospital so even if his heart felt a ripple that spread wide as an ocean, it wasn’t right for him to hold a petty grudge against a little demoness!

Unfortunately for Na Na, she wasn’t a mind reader and didn’t know Shi Dan Ping’s thoughts. The back corner of Na Na’s heart worried about retribution, because on her first day in the neurology department she offended the head neurosurgeon! Na Na’s anxiety escalated and she felt that the next two months wasn’t going to pass by peacefully!

After the day’s briefing, Zhang Wei Dong gave a short summary of the day’s priorities and everyone dispersed.

At eight in the morning, the doctors on the morning shift were going to check patients for any abnormalities. Before the doctors check on the patients’ health, the nurses followed the doctors’ advice and prepared the correct drugs and dosage for each patient.

Na Na wanted to take the initiative to go help prepare the drugs but she was called back.

The doctor’s plain baggy blue shirt on Shi Dan Ping was transformed into an elegant blue shirt. He took his unchanged expression on his face with his tall and lean body to step toward Na Na. He used two long fingers and held up a list then he passed the list to her.

‘Today, help me examine the patients,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na held the list and glanced at her duties for the day. A few duties were underlined with three black lines – ‘Get blood, urine and feces samples from all patients.’

Shi Dan Ping looked at Na Na as if she was off with the fairies so he spoke to her in a more serious tone to stress the importance of completing the duties he assigned her. ‘Complete everything on the list before ten in the morning.

Someone will come to collect the patients' samples for testing.'

Shi Dan Ping assessed the little lady, he thought her looks passed for charming. Her eyes were round and shiny, her face was like a dumpling, the bottom of her chin was like the bottom of a cherry and no matter how he looked at her... she just looked like a soft skinned simpleton!

Shi Dan Ping didn't intend to take revenge on a little lady. He simply assigned small duties to Na Na to ease his anger, he didn't give her anything hard to do. He felt he gave her duties that benefitted her body to condition her body for when she was his age!

Shi Dan Ping felt certain it was going to be an entertaining morning.

Na Na smiled and was about to say something, but she saw Shi Dan Ping frowned and immediately swallowed her words. Her mouth and tongue cooperated to form a stutter. 'Yes, Shi... director!'

Shi Dan Ping's complexion darkened, his good mood suddenly dropped to an abyss.

Shi Dan Ping was referred to by many titles – Doctor Shi, Shi specialist, Shi head neurosurgeon... until now no one called him Shi director.

Na Na was oblivious, she didn't know what titles Shi Dan Ping preferred to be called. She just laughed sweetly. 'I'm a first year nurse. I'll be training in the neurology department for two months. I hope Doctor Shi will look after me while I'm working under you.'

Shi Dan Ping leaned down to look at Na Na. She felt the way he looked at her was intimidating, her heart trembled and warned her to keep her mouth shut.

Shi Dan Ping smiled politely. 'OK, I'll remember to look after you a lot.'

Na Na laughed awkwardly then she turned her body around away from Shi Dan Ping's electric pole body.

'Wait,' Shi Dan Ping ordered. He frowned and looked closer at Na Na's chest. 'What's your name?'

Na Na panicked because she realised why Shi Dan Ping was staring at her chest – she forgot to wear her name tag! All first year nurses had to wear a name tag

on their uniform.

‘Na Na,’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping’s eyes looked impatient. ‘Family name?’

‘My family name is before my first name,’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping frowned and wasn’t satisfied with Na Na’s honest answer.

‘Naming someone is important. Who gave you such an absurd name?’

Na Na was offended. Her parents named her. Who decided that a nurse working in the neurology department wasn’t allowed to have a loveable name?

End Of Chapter Two (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na was about to defend her parents' beautiful name that they gave her but Liu Nan's loud laugh broke the tension between Na Na and Shi Dan Ping.

Liu Nan pushed a medical trolley toward Na Na and Shi Dan Ping. Liu Nan teased Shi Dan Ping mercilessly. 'Na Na, take no notice of our Doctor Shi. There are usually wise eyes above his head.' Liu Nan laughed cheekily. 'I find it strange that Doctor Shi is making life difficult for my new little nurse.'

Na Na immediately helped Liu Nan pushed the medical trolley and defended Shi Dan Ping at the same time. 'Head nurse, Dr Shi hasn't been picking on me.'

Liu Nan frowned and she looked at Shi Dan Ping to check if Na Na was telling the truth or protecting him.

Shi Dan Ping didn't say anything and calmly walked away from Liu Nan and Na Na.

Liu Nan didn't intend to let Shi Dan Ping off the hook too easily. Liu Nan raised her voice. 'Little Ping, make sure you don't forget a hundred thousand times that little Na Na is under my management.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't turn around, he just walked faster away from Liu Nan's loud warning not to mess with Na Na.

'What happened between you and Doctor Shi?' Liu Nan asked.

Na Na didn't want Liu Nan to scold Shi Dan Ping so Na Na only told Liu Nan that he gave Na Na a list of duties to complete before ten in the morning.

Liu Nan didn't get a vibe that Na Na and Shi Dan Ping had bad blood between them so Liu Nan let him off the hook. 'OK, follow his requests. Put the patients' samples in the staff room before ten and someone will collect them.'

Na Na carried out her duties diligently.

Usually hospital patients are healthy enough to go to the toilet and collect a sample of their feces themselves – the exception was neuro patients. Most

neuro patients weren't able to go to the toilet on their own so Na Na personally attached the feces collection bag's tube to each of the neuro patients' anus.

The patients' urine drainage bags made it easier for Na Na to collect urine samples. Na Na used medical syringes to collect blood samples.

Na Na was used to collecting patients' feces, urine and blood samples... but never so many within less than two hours! She wore two masks and two layers of disposable gloves. But she could still smell the feces and felt the urine bags were warm. For the first time in her life she loved the smell of hospital disinfectant to that extent between eight and ten in the morning that day.

After a smelly work day, Na Na walked home but the poor facilities of the accommodation building for hospital staff made it hard for Na Na to wash the stench off her body without feeling scared and repulsed. The public bathroom room facilities for all staff was located on the ground floor of the accommodation building, which was the only bathroom in the building that facilitated hot water. At night cockroaches crawled on the ground floor bathroom and each time Na Na showered there at night she also heard the sounds of rats gnawing the pipes.

Na Na forced herself to quickly shower in the public bathroom on the ground floor then she dragged her drained body upstairs to hers and Mao Dan's home. The moment Na Na stepped inside their home, Mao Dan rushed toward Na Na and excitedly gripped Na Na's hands. 'Where's the photos? Hurry and show me Doctor Shi's photos!'

Na Na sighed. 'Doctor Shi was in the operating room all day. There wasn't an opportunity for me to take photos of him.'

Mao Dan was disappointed and released Na Na's hands. Mao Dan sighed bitterly. 'Why didn't you use your brain? You could have taken photos of him during the morning briefing.'

'Are you certain... Doctor Shi is actually a gentle and beautiful flower?' Na Na asked.

Na Na wasn't convinced a slave master like Shi Dan Ping even remotely resembled a flower.

Mao Dan squinted her eyes. 'Didn't you confirmed for yourself today? Doctor Shi is a magnificent male specimen but not the delicate pretty boy kind. He's like a beautiful glory-of-the-snow flower that grows on top of a cold mountain... pure and cold.'

'He's more like what's beneath a white lotus-' Na Na said.

'Your brain is the one that's muddy enough to plant a white lotus!' Mao Dan protested.

Na Na helplessly and quietly unpacked her bag in her room. But Mao Dan shadowed Na Na to pry more details about Shi Dan Ping from Na Na. 'What happened in one day for you to feel that way about Doctor Shi? What's your impression of him? Don't tell me that he confiscated the photos you took of him.'

Na Na couldn't keep what Shi Dan Ping put her through on her first day bottled up anymore and recounted everything to Mao Dan. Na Na was so angry she broke the coat hanger she held in her hands.

Na Na thought Mao Dan would be sympathetic toward Na Na, but Mao Dan took Shi Dan Ping's side!

Mao Dan crossed her arms. 'You're the one in the wrong. Doctor Shi is a straight forward man and says it as he sees it. Besides, his intentions were honourable. If you didn't take the initiative to help the elderly man then it wouldn't have caused Doctor Shi to misunderstand you.'

Na Na was so angry that if she had the elderly man's cane in her hand then she would make good use of it to vent her anger.

Mao Dan sighed. She leaned on the wall next to the window. 'It's hard for average humans like us to decipher the inner workings of a genius' mind... it's lonely being at the top of the food chain so it's natural he has a cold exterior.'

Na Na didn't care about cold loneliness, she just felt Shi Dan Ping was the poisonous kind of cold. Na Na threw the broken coat hanger out of the window.

Someone cried out in pain below the window. Na Na panicked and moved away from the window. But Na Na didn't missed who the broken coat hanger landed on – it was Shi Dan Ping! He rubbed his head and picked up the broken

coat hanger.

End of Chapter Two (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Three

Chapter Three

Shi Dan Ping felt recently things haven't been going his way. He had an incredibly bad day. In the afternoon he performed an emergency brain surgery. The surgery lasted more than two hours but it was unsuccessful. The patient's family chased him, they cried and begged him to save their family member. He consoled them and tactfully explained to them in different ways that their family member died but they refused to believe him.

Shi Dan Ping understood why the deceased patient's parents didn't want to accept their child was dead. The deceased patient was a young twenty-year-old and suffered a traumatic brain injury (TBI) from a car accident. How was a parent supposed to accept their child who had a bright future ahead of them was dead?

Shi Dan Ping's mood was at rock bottom. Yet he still had to patiently write a report, which detailed the patient's cause of death. Afterward, the head of the emergency department called him to report why the patient died. By the time the whole ordeal ended it was nearly rush hour.

Shi Dan Ping wanted to drink two glasses of wine to unwind but he took into consideration that he couldn't drive after drinking. So he left his car parked at the hospital and walked to a nearby bar. He took the fastest route to the bar by exiting the back entrance of the hospital. On the way to the bar he didn't expect an unnatural disaster to fall on him from the sky – a broken coat hanger fell on his head! It was painful enough for tears to spill out of his eyes.

Fortunately the coat hanger didn't hit Shi Dan Ping's face, otherwise the next work day everyone at the hospital would ridicule him.

Inside Na Na's room, Na Na hid away from the window. Mao Dan saw Na Na's panicked state and Mao Dan was scared that Na Na accidentally killed someone with the broken coat hanger. 'You actually killed someone?'

Na Na's voice was soft and sounded soulless. 'My life is ruined! I accidentally killed myself! I've injured the hospital's darling jewel and beautiful flower.'

Mao Dan was initially angry Na Na injured the flower in Mao Dan's heart. But Mao Dan's eyes brightened because she thought it was an opportunity from the heavens for her to meet her dream flower. Mao Dan leaned over the window and checked who Na Na's broken coat hanger landed on – it was Shi Dan Ping! He was squatting and rubbing his head.

Mao Dan felt even Shi Dan Ping's squatting posture was perfect.

Na Na's panicked state wore off and her frugalness kicked in. 'My coat hanger...'

Mao Dan quickly pushed Na Na's head down and Mao Dan spoke in a calm and serious tone. 'Hey, it was me who dropped the coat hanger. You're not allowed to take the blame.'

Na Na felt a gale passed by. She looked at the spot Mao Dan was standing then she looked at her opened bedroom door – Mao Dan was gone.

Na Na's head was foggy, she hid behind the window curtain and secretly stared outside the window. Na Na saw Mao Dan happily running toward Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na's heart momentarily felt moved and she used the curtain to wipe her tears of gratefulness.

Na Na was grateful Mao Dan was her friend, because Mao Dan was willing to be executed for Na Na. Mao Dan was the true definition of friendship and bravery!

The hospital neurology department's expectations of their surgeons were demanding and high. Each surgeon was required to have the highest level of focus and precision, otherwise one small mistake had fatal consequences and was irreversible.

So after a stressful day of surgeries, Shi Dan Ping was mentally exhausted and being hit on the head by a surprise coat hanger caused him to be temporarily dizzy. He squatted, waited for the dizziness to pass, picked up the coat hanger and slowly stood.

The moment Shi Dan Ping stood, he felt a gale passed by but it was a stranger who stood in front of him.

Shi Dan Ping felt uncomfortable in the face of admiration, he slowly straightened his back and stared down at his unwanted fan.

‘I’m really sorry, I didn’t do it on purpose. I was hanging my clothes and my coat hanger slipped from my hand... it was my fault. Are you hurt anywhere?’ Mao Dan asked shyly and her cheeks were bright red.

Shi Dan Ping assessed the unwanted fan in front of him, she had her head bowed and she apologised to him earnestly. He grinned coldly and his sadistic nature was evoked – he saw through her shy act.

Shi Dan Ping wasn’t fooled by her apologetic words, because he recognised the familiar excitement in her eyes. That kind of excitement was hard to ignore, it was like a bouquet of fresh flowers and the aura given off could easily choke him to death if he looked too long at the same pair of excited eyes.

If Shi Dan Ping was brutally honest the sickening excited eyes were more like... a starving crane’s eyes and the moment it saw fish meat, the crane couldn’t wait to take a bite.

Shi Dan Ping felt his luck changed, he didn’t need to drink tonight to unwind and he saved money too. Because a crane took the initiative to come to him and provided free entertainment for him.

Shi Dan Ping’s bottled frustrations from a stressful day finally had an opportunity to be released. There was a cold gleam in his eyes and he laughed coldly. ‘It’s nothing, I understand.’

Mao Dan was immersed in a trance, her dream flower stood in front of her and he was smiling brightly at her. She thought Dr Shi was indeed gentle and beautiful in person!

Shi Dan Ping spoke calmly. ‘Someone like you from the time of birth to the day you die, will always have a small brain. I have seen it a lot, it’s hard for someone with a small brain to send signals to their limbs to coordinate with their small brain. A slipped hand is nothing, luckily your foot didn’t slip. Otherwise the force of your foot kicking the coat hanger outside your window... would have caused me to collapse and my head would be flattened as the ground.’

Shi Dan Ping’s surgical skills were sharp as his poisonous tongue, with a few

words he was able to cause someone's heart to bleed profusely.

Mao Dan laughed stiffly and her cheeks were bright red with shame instead of excitement. 'Hehe... you're a real comedian.'

Shi Dan Ping wasn't going to let the crane fly off easily. He frowned and spoke sternly. 'What? Did you forget you own a small brain? Or after your mother gave birth to you and the umbilical cord was cut, you were dropped on your head and it affected your memory?'

Mao Dan vaguely heard her heart fainted. She couldn't believe Dr Shi only spoke a few words to her but he easily broke her high spirits.

Shi Dan Ping glanced at the crane and he saw her delusions were destroyed. Her soulless state, improved his solemn mood.

Shi Dan Ping was a little grateful toward the crane and he kindly reassured her. 'Actually, just because you have a small brain and limited memory capacity doesn't mean you're hopeless. At least you can control your foot.'

Shi Dan Ping knew it was hard to swallow poisonous insults, let alone a little girl in her spring years being stomped on by someone she admired. So he was satisfied his tongue left out poisonous sarcasm when he reassured the crane.

Mao Dan covered her bright red ashamed face and ran home. Mao Dan barged into Na Na's room and Mao Dan leaned on Na Na's chest. Mao Dan cried and cursed at the same time. 'Na Na you lied to me. Doctor Shi is a cruel flower, the most evil kind of flower!'

Na Na was concerned about why Mao Dan was crying. Na Na gently pushed Mao Dan away from Na Na's chest. 'What happened? Did Doctor Shi took out his anger on you?'

Na Na felt guilty, she knew Dr Shi was a bad egg but she let Mao Dan take the blame for the coat hanger incident.

Mao Dan felt her world was destroyed by Shi Dan Ping's cruel words. She wiped her tears and blamed herself for her broken heart.

Na Na sighed. 'You should have believed me when I told you Doctor Shi wasn't a gentle and beautiful flower.'

Mao Dan glared at Na Na and Mao Dan defended Dr Shi a little. 'You're not allowed to say Doctor Shi is a bad person!'

Na Na looked condescendingly at Mao Dan. Na Na wasn't the type who gloated when someone was in trouble. Na Na helplessly passed Mao Dan tissues for Mao Dan to wipe tears and Na Na consoled Mao Dan. 'Don't be upset, it wasn't your fault... you were just a little impatient and couldn't wait for your dream flower to take the initiative to come and find you.'

Na Na heard Mao Dan's crying subsided and Na Na remembered about her coat hanger. 'Where's my coat hanger?'

Mao Dan pointed at the window. 'Downstairs. If you can't find it, buy a new one.'

Na Na sighed and she went downstairs to look for her coat hanger. There was no one downstairs, only a snapped coat hanger. Even though the coat hanger was cheap, she bought it recently and felt a little heartbroken to let it go to waste. She picked up her snapped coat hanger, brushed dust off it and mumbled to herself – 'Doctor Shi, what a vandal!'

What Na Na didn't know was Shi Dan Ping hid nearby and he saw her heartbroken state over a cheap coat hanger.

When Shi Dan Ping reached the hospital's back entrance, he changed his mind and walked back to the bar. He was treated to a sight of Na Na gently brushing dust off the coat hanger he snapped. Immediately his heart was lit on fire! He realised it wasn't the crane who accidentally dropped the coat hanger on his head – it was Na Na who purposely used the coat hanger for revenge!

Shi Dan Ping felt his heart was going to burst out of his chest. He didn't plan to take real revenge on Na Na, yet the Hello Kitty dared to ride on a wolf's head!

End of Chapter Three

Related

Four

Chapter Four

Na Na learnt her lesson and didn't dare to sleep in on a work day. Because she was scared if she was running late for work again, she'd run into Dr Shi like yesterday morning.

But Na Na went overboard to prevent herself from waking up late. Before she slept, she turned on several alarms and asked Mao Dan to wake her up if she wasn't awake before Mao Dan left for work.

The result of Na Na's worrywart preventative measures was she woke up and ate breakfast before dawn. When she arrived at the hospital she helped the nightshift nurses take patients' blood pressures and recorded them on the patients' hospital records.

After dawn, the hospital gradually became noisier. Na Na patiently waited for all the morning shift nurses to arrive then Liu Nan briefed Na Na and the other morning shift nurses their priority duties for the day.

In the morning a new patient was transferred to the ICU. The new patient was an overworked labourer. Due to fatigue the new patient fell off a scaffold, which caused a spinal cord injury (SCI).

In the staff room Zhang Wei Dong only said a few words about the new patient to Luo Xing Tao. 'The transferred patient's bed is bed 47. Later I'll send someone over to the ICU to explain in detail about bed 47 patient's injury.'

Luo Xing Tao just turned forty years old and he was one of the ICU's directors. Compared to Shi Dan Ping, Luo Xing Tao worked many more years at the hospital, but Luo Xing Tao's name wasn't as famous as Shi Dan Ping at the hospital.

At the hospital Zhang Wei Dong was the most senior and respected doctor. Luo Xing Tao thought it wasn't long before Zhang Wei Dong retired and based on Luo Xing Tao being one of the hospital's longest serving doctors and well connected, Luo Xing Tao was gunning to take over Zhang Wei Dong's prestigious

position. Unfortunately for Luo Xing Tao, a sudden rival showed up at the hospital in the form of Shi Dan Ping. Shi Dan Ping recently returned from studying overseas, he was recognised by the international medical communities as a neurosurgeon prodigy and he was also the recipient of many prestigious medicine awards.

Initially Luo Xing Tao underestimated Shi Dan Ping, he thought no matter how vast Shi Dan Ping's medical knowledge was, it was useless unless Shi Dan Ping was well connected to be promoted to one of the top positions at the hospital.

Many doctors in their lifetimes weren't able to become a director, unless one of the hospital directors retired or resigned and the doctor had the backing of many influential veteran medical doctors.

So Luo Xing Tao wrongly assumed Shi Dan Ping fell into the large group of doctors who wouldn't become a director. Because despite Shi Dan Ping's medical fame, he was just a young thirty-one year old doctor and not well connected.

However, the hospital decided to heavily invest in the neurology department and offered Zhang Wei Dong to oversee a new research study, which was highly likely to be a lucrative endeavour. Zhang Wei Dong declined and recommended Shi Dan Ping to oversee the new research study. As a result, Luo Xing Tao realised Shi Dan Ping was a threat to hinder Luo Xing Tao from taking a step closer to be the hospital's chief of medical staff. So whether it was in front of Shi Dan Ping's face or behind Shi Dan Ping's back, Luo Xing Tao never wasted an opportunity to show his dissatisfaction of Shi Dan Ping's existence at the hospital.

The new patient being transferred to the ICU riled Luo Xing Tao's dissatisfaction of the hospital favouring the neurology department over the ICU. 'Why is it always the ICU taking on patients from other hospital departments? Isn't it more sensible for a patient suffering from a SCI to be transferred to the neurology department? The ICU is already crowded enough, how are the ICU staff supposed to cope taking on more patients?'

In the short time Na Na worked at the hospital she realised there was an unspoken conflict of interest amongst doctors. On one hand doctors were

responsible for saving lives, but on the other hand no doctor wanted to be liable if a patient died under their care.

Inside the hospital staff room, a young disgruntled ICU doctor voiced what the other doctors couldn't dispute. 'Director Zhang, transferring patients from other crowded hospital departments to the ICU isn't a solution. What if other hospital departments offloaded patients they neglected? It's not fair for the ICU to be accountable for other hospital departments' negligence! Last month the ICU's budget was reduced unfairly based on the average recovery period of patients compared to the other hospital departments. The ICU is a major department and is already understaffed, how is the ICU supposed to manage if the ICU's budget is further reduced after each month passes?'

'Enough!' Zhang Wei Dong said impatiently. He crossed his arms. 'I understand everyone's concerns. But a patient's life is more important than internal conflict between hospital departments!'

Zhang Wei Dong understood the struggles of young doctors. Young doctors' salaries weren't high, but they had elderly parents, spouses or young children to support, mortgage or rent payments, travel costs and student loan payments. Their work and private life pressures were high and the expectations to work overtime strained many of their personal relationships. So it was natural for young doctors to be frustrated when their sacrifices weren't rewarded.

Zhang Wei Dong felt helpless to satisfy everyone's needs and provide the best health care for patients too. Like everyone in the staff room he was human, what solution did they expect him to come up with?

Zhang Wei Dong composed himself and spoke in a calmer voice. 'It's eight in the morning. Time for everyone to check on patients and prepare for surgeries. Stop wasting time!'

Luo Xing Tao was unhappy about the outcome of the dispute about the new patient's transfer. But Zhang Wei Dong was the one in the room with the final say so Luo Xing Tao had no choice but to keep his mouth closed and led his staff to check on the ICU patients.

Na Na was quiet during the morning briefing and listened carefully to each person's views. It made her realised how naive her beliefs were before she

started working as a nurse. Despite endless media reports about unethical doctors, she used to think most doctors who wore a white lab coat owned a compassionate heart.

But after Na Na was rotated to all the different hospital departments, she realised there were common elements between medical staff from each department. Like the heart of conversations always focused on departmental and individual gains a what's-in-it-for-me mentality. There wasn't a day that passed without someone initiating conversations revolving around self-interests.

At the start of Na Na's first year of nursing, it was hard for her to believe behind white lab coats were hearts with a portion of selfishness like other humans. Gradually as each month passed, she accepted it was the true colour of the hospital's work culture.

On the inside Na Na laughed at her old naive self who thought all doctors who saved lives were angels in white lab coats with extraordinary good hearts. The reality was they were humans who faced the frailness of human mortality the most. No matter how soft their hearts were, eventually at work their hearts became cold like a soulless body, otherwise it was hard for them to adapt to a high pressure life and death hospital oven.

Na Na also realised in each situation there was an exception. She stared at Shi Dan Ping. At the start of the morning briefing, he coldly sat at a bright corner then he happily flipped through a newspaper as though he wasn't aware of the tensed atmosphere inside the staff room.

Liu Nan noticed the way Na Na was drawn to Shi Dan Ping. 'Na Na, is your heart interested in our little Ping?'

'As if my heart dares!' Na Na said without hesitation.

Shi Dan Ping's body stiffened slightly but Liu Nan noticed. Liu Nan was someone who felt happy seeing someone fated for trouble. On the inside Liu Nan laughed at Shi Dan Ping's thin veil of sternness he wore on the outside to hide his interest toward Na Na.

Liu Nan laughed cheekily. 'There isn't a young girl who can oppose the force of little Ping's attractiveness. He's handsome, he has a strong physique and he has a high paying job. It's natural for you to like him.'

Na Na laughed awkwardly and scratched her head. 'Doctor Shi is a good male specimen. But he's not the type I like.'

Liu Nan's eyes brightened with curiosity. 'Then what type do you like?'

'I like... a good man who is gentle and caring,' Na Na said carelessly.

Shi Dan Ping suddenly stood and he stiffly walked out of the staff room. Whilst Liu Nan was the only one in the staff room who realised why Shi Dan Ping abruptly left, Liu Nan laughed loudly like a demoness.

In the morning when it was time for neuro patients to be examined, family members waiting in the reception room usually chatted noisily. Shi Dan Ping from a distance clearly heard their chatter.

Shi Dan Ping gritted his teeth and strode to the direction of his patients. On the inside his heart was raging!

Who did Na Na think she was? Na Na wasn't a human girl! Shi Dan Ping thought most girls liked him even before they knew his name. But Na Na didn't want someone like him who had good looks and a good body. Na Na that little rabbit dared to not like him because he wasn't gentle and caring... he felt the little rabbit wasn't satisfied enough by insulting him that he wasn't gentle and caring so she also said he wasn't a good man!

Shi Dan Ping adjusted his glasses, his eyes gleamed coldly as his cold face.

Na Na was oblivious she was used by Liu Nan to provoke Shi Dan Ping. But Na Na sensed imminent danger of being favoured by someone fierce like Liu Nan.

Liu Nan laughed loudly and patted Na Na's shoulder. Na Na felt it was strange after Liu Nan handed drugs to Na Na to give to the patients, out of the blue Liu Nan asked Na Na questions unrelated to the patients' health. Na Na gave Liu Nan the benefit of the doubt and thought Liu Nan wanted to know more about Na Na in order to take better care of Na Na. So Na Na answered all of Liu Nan's strange questions honestly.

Liu Nan felt such an honest little girl was hard to find in the modern era! Liu Nan's conscience returned and she quickly changed personal questions back to work questions. 'Na Na, if you don't understand anything just ask me. It's natural for people to have lots of questions when they're new to a job.' Her

heart softened out of her control and her voice was gentler. ‘Don’t be scared. You’re heart just need to be in the right place at work and you won’t encounter too many work problems.’

Na Na was grateful for Liu Nan’s kindness and Na Na nodded. ‘I understand.’

‘I know you’re a good girl... remember clearly, Doctor Shi is a monster from hell. You can only look at him from a distance. Don’t look at him at a close range. When you can, stay far away from him,’ Liu Nan warned.

Na Na’s heart felt warm and fuzzy. She smiled like a simpleton. ‘Head nurse, you’re thinking too much. I only feel respect toward Doctor Shi, he saved a lot of lives. Despite his strange personality, he’s still a good person.’

Liu Nan couldn’t bear to face Na Na’s innocent eyes, naive smile and the unwavering belief that Shi Dan Ping was a good person deep down. Liu Nan quietly turned around and sighed. ‘No matter what... if little Ping dares to bully you, just tell me and I’ll deal with him for you.’

Na Na felt happy Liu Nan was taking extra care of Na Na and Na Na’s smiling dumpling face gave off a halo aura.

But later when Na Na arrived at the neurology department and Shi Dan Ping’s eyes saw Na Na’s simpleton smile, he felt her smile was unforgivable.

Whilst Shi Dan Ping was madly typing a medical treatment advice on a computer, he secretly glared at Na Na. He really wanted to pinch the dumpling’s face off.

End of Chapter Four

Related

Five

Chapter Five

After Liu Nan's words of encouragement the simpleton Na Na willingly sold herself to her job. Na Na worked hard from early morning to late evening and she also took the initiative to help her co-workers.

Na Na's daily nursing duties included measuring patients' body temperatures and blood pressures at set times, give patients their drugs based on their doctor's advice and update patients' hospital records.

Usually before morning briefings Na Na's co-workers formed small clusters and gossiped.

Unlike Na Na's co-workers she preferred to go help patients who pressed the nurse call button than gossip before morning briefings. Her co-workers were overjoyed Na Na was an industrious little ant worker, because it meant they got to relax in the mornings and watch the morning news on TV.

During the hospital's busiest peak time, a new patient was brought from the operating room to the seventeenth floor. Another head nurse Chen Jie was worried Na Na wouldn't be able to handle a difficult patient so Chen Jie came to the hospital before the night shift to help Na Na.

The new patient had a brain surgery, thick bandages were wrapped around his head and he would wake up soon, because the anaesthetic drug in his body was wearing off.

Na Na and Chen Jie both measured the new patient's body temperature and blood pressure then they checked for the status of the surgical wound. They didn't find any abnormalities and let the new patient rest.

Na Na picked up the new patient's hospital record and wanted to update the record for Chen Jie. 'Head nurse, let me update it for you.'

'You've worked the whole day, go and rest!' Chen Jie said.

'It's nothing, my shift is nearly over. I can rest at home,' Na Na said. She scratched her dumpling head. She didn't feel she overworked herself. 'I'm still

new on the job. There are many things I don't understand so the more practical experience I gain the more familiar I'll be with my job.'

Chen Jie sighed. Chen Jie wished other junior nurses were hard working like Na Na, it meant Chen Jie could supervise more than stepping in to perform trivial nursing duties. 'Don't burn your body out, fatigue can lead to unnecessary mistakes on the job. Go home and rest!'

Na Na hugged the new patient's hospital record, she was deeply moved by Chen Jie's thoughtfulness.

Chen Jie saw Na Na's sincere grateful teary eyes and it made Chen Jie felt like she was a sinner so she quickly ushered Na Na outside the new patient's hospital room.

On the way back to the new patient's hospital room, Chen Jie saw Shi Dan Ping leaned on an office door and combined with the fiery sunlight behind him, he scared her to death. 'Doctor Shi, did you just finished a surgery?'

Shi Dan Ping's hair was damp, it was obvious he just had a shower after a surgery. He nodded his head and spoke in casual tone. 'Head nurse, are you on the night shift tonight?'

Chen Jie was shocked. Usually if anyone initiated a conversation with Shi Dan Ping, they'd be lucky to get even a nod from him as acknowledgement he heard them. Chen Jie was shocked Shi Dan Ping actually used words to respond to her.

The hospital rooms on the seventeenth floor were reserved for patients after a neurosurgery to recover. If a neuro patient after a surgery was in a critical condition then the patient was transferred to the ICU.

'Then it's certainly a tough night for you... your husband's been called to work overtime, there's no one to look after your young child,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Chen Jie received another shock. 'My husband's not working overtime-'

'Your husband's not home. He was called earlier to work overtime,' Shi Dan Ping impatiently explained.

Chen Jie frowned. She didn't understand because when she left home, her husband was still at home and he was meant to pick up their child from

childcare.

‘Your child is too young to be left home alone. Head nurse, why don’t you swap your night shift with another nurse... oh, the nurse before is a good choice. She’s a healthy young nurse like a young ox. An extra night shift certainly won’t be a problem for her,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

In a blink of an eye Chen Jie understood why Shi Dan Ping mysteriously spoke to her and why her husband was suddenly called to work overtime. Chen Jie’s heart sighed, she felt sorry for the simpleton Na Na, who offended the ‘living evil’ Shi Dan Ping without realising it. ‘Na Na is a good choice, but she worked for the whole day. It’s not a good idea for her to take on the night shift too-’

‘Head nurse, are you scared she’ll surpass you if she’s given the opportunity to gain more on-the-job training?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Chen Jie knew clearly Shi Dan Ping purposely used words to provoke her. But she was cornered and had no choice except walk into the trap he set.

Unlike Liu Nan, Chen Jie was more scared of offending Shi Dan Ping than offending the heavens. Chen Jie rushed to the staff change room and stopped Na Na from going home. ‘Na Na, I just received a phone call from my husband. He has to work overtime, and we didn’t have enough time to find a babysitter... our child’s just turned three. I don’t feel reassured leaving our child home alone at night. Can you do me a favour and take on my night shift? I’ll take on one of your shifts.’

Na Na immediately nodded her head. ‘Ok, head nurse. It’s nearly closing time at the childcare centre. Quickly go pick up your child!’

Chen Jie felt guilty for selling the kind Na Na to the ‘living evil’ Shi Dan Ping. Chen Jie didn’t understand how someone as kind as Na Na could have offended Shi Dan Ping. ‘Na Na, I’m really sorry-’

‘It’s not a problem,’ Na Na said and she hurriedly waved her hands. ‘Everyone has urgent times. One night shift is not a problem.’

Chen Jie sighed. Chen Jie patted Na Na’s shoulder. Chen Jie glanced at their surroundings then she whispered in Na Na’s ear. ‘Remember, tonight unless a patient is on the verge of dying, don’t wake up Doctor Shi!’

Na Na looked confusedly at Chen Jie. 'Why's that?'

Chen Jie coughed awkwardly. Then she spoke calmly. 'Doctor Shi works long hours and needs sleep to stay focus during surgeries... if he doesn't get enough sleep, he'll be in a bad mood!'

Na Na's tongue felt numb. Dr Shi's usual mood was bad enough. If what Chen Jie said was true... how scary would he be if he was deprived of sleep?

Chen Jie didn't dare to say too much, because she was worried Na Na would be suspicious. Chen Jie quickly advised Na Na what needed to be done during the night shift then Chen Jie immediately left to pick up her child from the childcare centre.

Chen Jie was worried for nothing. Na Na wasn't suspicious in the slightest. Na Na listened attentively to Chen Jie's advice then Na Na called Mao Dan to let Mao Dan know not to expect Na Na home that night.

Na Na quickly ate dinner then she went to check on the neuro patients.

Na Na finished checking on the neuro patients by ten at night. She went to the staff room and laid on one of the small beds to nap. She didn't know how tired her body was until her body touched the bed.

Na Na napped lightly for a little while before bed three patient pressed the nurse call button. She quickly went to see the patient, he said he was in pain and wanted pain relief drugs.

Na Na spoke softly. 'Where does it hurt? How painful is it?'

The patient was older than thirty years old and his head was wrapped in thick white bandages like a white dumpling. He pointed at his head 'It hurts here... I feel like thousands of horses are galloping back and forth... nurse, I'm begging you, give me pain relief drugs, I want to sleep...'

Na Na had no authority to give patients additional drugs. She reluctantly ran to Dr Shi's cave.

Na Na knocked on Shi Dan Ping's office door for a long time before he opened the door.

'What is it?' Shi Dan Ping asked impatiently.

Na Na completely forgot about Chen Jie's advice not to bother Doctor Shi unless someone was on the verge of dying. In Na Na's heart was just concern for the patient in pain. 'Bed patient three is in unbearable pain, he asked for more pain relief-'

'Tell him there are no pain relief drugs!' Shi Dan Ping said coldly. 'If there's nothing important, don't bother me!'

Shi Dan Ping slammed his office door.

Na Na helplessly returned to console the patient. 'Doctor Shi didn't agree to give you more drugs. You already know about pain relief drugs, your body will be addicted to it if overused. You need to endure the pain a little longer...'

Na Na consoled the patient for a long time before she went back to the staff room to nap again. She barely closed her eyes before the same patient pressed the nurse call button.

The whole night Na Na went back and forth from the patient's bed to Dr Shi's office. Each time Dr Shi scolded her and chased her away.

Finally bed patient three cried out in pain and Na Na risked her life and knocked on Dr Shi's office door again. That time Dr Shi opened his door the quickest, so quick he forgot to put on his glasses. He glared at her and gritted his teeth. 'If this time isn't an important matter, you must die!'

'Patient... bed three, he's in a lot of pain... no, he's on the verge of dying! He said there are thousands of horses inside his brain-' Na Na said softly.

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. 'Wait until he plants a pasture for the thousands of horses in his brain then you can talk!'

Na Na's temper flared and she used her arm to stop Dr Shi from closing his office door. 'The patient is really in a lot of pain! What sort of doctor are you? You have no sense of compassion!'

Shi Dan Ping glared at Na Na's arm that stopped him from closing the door. 'There's no one on this entire floor who isn't in pain. If each time anyone asks for pain relief drugs and receives it... isn't a compassionate solution!'

'But this patient can't sleep-' Na Na protested.

Shi Dan Ping's face was about to fall off from sleep deprivation. He wanted to keep the little rabbit up all night. But how did he ended up with no sleep the whole night... it was karma!

'I'm warning you the last time!' Shi Dan Ping said coldly. He removed Na Na's arm that obstructed the door from closing. 'Unless someone is on the verge of dying, don't wake me up!'

Na Na was chased away heartlessly. But she stubbornly knocked on Dr Shi's door for two hours before she heard a loud 'leave' from the other side of the door and she crestfallenly left.

End of Chapter Five.

Related

part 1

Chapter Six (Part 1)

Na Na felt deeply sorry toward bed three patient. She wanted to help him forget about his pain until the next set time he was allowed to take a pain relief drug. So she sat on a chair next to his bed and listened to him talk about his life from when he was a child to an adult.

Between three and four in the morning was when most people were sound asleep. But during that time Na Na barely kept her eyes opened and the patient's constant chattering sounded like it came from a faraway place, she only heard faint murmurings.

Na Na sat her tired body on a chair next to the patient's bed and she occasionally nodded her head to appear like she was listening. As a result of Na Na's consideration, it encouraged the patient to talk nonstop about everything from his life history to trivial objects in his house.

At five in the morning, the sky brightened.

At six in the morning the night shift nurses measured patients' body temperatures and blood pressures. Na Na didn't want to rudely interrupt the patient's long winded recount of his life, instead she said comforting words to him until he finally closed his eyes and slept.

Na Na stood from her chair. She couldn't stop her body from swaying and she felt light headed. She yawned and slowly walked back to the staff room. In the staff room she closed her eyes to wash her face. Then she drank a large cup of black coffee before she finished her final night shift duties.

Na Na measured the body temperatures and blood pressures of patients assigned to her. She also asked the patients how they slept last night and updated the patients' hospital records. Afterward she helped some patients prepare for their scheduled morning surgeries. By the time she completed everything it was seven in the morning.

Shi Dan Ping didn't get a good night sleep, because Na Na constantly

interrupted his sleep last night. His face looked as tired as his bad mood. The moment he stepped outside his office he saw Na Na and his bad mood sunk lower. His eyes behind his cold glasses were hawk like and glared intensely at Na Na, which clearly showed his discontent toward her.

Shi Dan Ping thought in the morning Na Na would be scared enough to hug her thighs and cry her heart out. But Na Na didn't cry nor did she show any signs of remorse and apologised to him. He didn't expect the little rabbit to be so brave! Na Na casually stood in front of him, glared at him and spoke to him in a condemning tone of voice. 'Doctor Shi did you have a good sleep after midnight?'

'From three to seven in the morning, no one disturbed my sleep so I was able to get some sleep,' Shi Dan Ping said sternly.

Na Na stayed up all night and she couldn't control her frustrations. She spoke sarcastically. 'You should be grateful toward your patient. He was a trooper, he didn't die from pain and allowed you to get a few hours of solid sleep... Doctor Shi, how could you sleep peacefully knowing your patient was suffering and on the verge of dying?'

Shi Dan Ping's mood was frozen solid. As a neurosurgeon not only did he work long hours, but he was constantly under enormous pressures at work. The tensed life and death atmosphere was mentally draining. So he learnt to take advantage of every opportunity to take a break and unwind in order not to lose focus and make fatal mistakes during surgeries.

Shi Dan Ping knew he was a bad person. Many years of working as a neurosurgeon made him familiar with the sight of dead corpses. As a result of facing the cruel reality humans were mortals on a daily basis, he learnt to harden his heart and toughen his mind, otherwise he'd mentally break.

Shi Dan Ping wasn't carefree nor was he an excessively devoted doctor, and he never thought about sacrificing himself to save patients. But it didn't mean he wasn't a good doctor!

The effect of Shi Dan Ping being too angry was it made him wide awake. He carefully looked at the angry little rabbit in front of him, and he realised there was something unusual about the little rabbit.

He saw the little rabbit's usual smooth face looked dehydrated and pale like a tortilla. The dark circles around her eyes were repulsive. He raised his eyebrows and voiced his suspicions. 'Did you stay awake the whole night?'

Na Na's anger exploded and her round face puffed up like a bloated dumpling after she felt Dr Shi was gloating by stating the obvious. 'It's my fault, unlike someone, I haven't mastered how to harden my heart. The patient couldn't sleep because he was in a lot of pain so how could I sleep peacefully?'

'You not sleeping, can that ease his suffering?' Shi Dan Ping asked rhetorically.

Na Na was angry enough to raise her voice. 'At least my lack of sleep offset his mental pain! I stayed awake to comfort him by listening and talking to him. It also compensated his anxiety from meeting a heartless doctor!'

Shi Dan Ping couldn't control himself and laughed mockingly. 'Little... hey nurse, I feel the seventeenth floor isn't suitable for you to optimise your potential. The nineteenth floor is more suitable for you to show case your natural abilities.'

Although Na Na didn't understand why Dr Shi suddenly gave her practical advice, her confusion momentarily outweighed her anger. 'I'm still a new nurse at the hospital and I haven't decided which health department to specialise in... by the way, which department is on the nineteenth floor?'

Shi Dan Ping held back his laugh and spoke casually. 'The psychology ward.'

Na Na was slow to connect the dots and she spoke naively. 'Why am I suited to specialise there?'

Shi Dan Ping purposely stared quietly at Na Na for a while before he replied. 'On the nineteenth floor... if you're there then there will be a lot of psychiatric patients for you to chat with.'

End of Chapter Six (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Six (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na realised she was mocked. Her face was bright red from anger. 'You're too much! I won't help you cover your heartless deed from last night!'

Shi Dan Ping shrugged his shoulders. If the little rabbit wanted to make a fool of herself then he wasn't going to stop her, because it wouldn't be him who'd be discredited.

Na Na was too angry and didn't have an appetite to eat breakfast. In the staff room before the morning briefing, Na Na's dumpling face was on the verge of bursting.

Liu Nan noticed Na Na's unusual complexion and Liu Nan voiced her concerns. 'What happened? Today aren't you scheduled for a later shift? Why did you come to the hospital so early?'

Na Na's angry dumpling face blew up a little more and she was about to condemn Dr Shi's heartless behaviour last night, but she patiently refrained voicing her thoughts when Zhang Wei Dong entered the staff room to commence the morning briefing.

Zhang Wei Dong carried a large cup of tea into the staff room and he laughed a jolly laugh. He spoke in his usual booming voice. 'Good, everyone's here. Let's start the briefing!'

The unspoken routine during staff meetings was senior staff got to report about their patients before junior staff so Na Na waited a long time for her turn to speak.

'Bed five patient's body after surgery showed no abnormal reactions, slept through the night and body temperature was thirty-seven degrees. Last night bed three patient's pain increased a lot. He asked for additional pain relief drugs many times, but Doctor Shi refused each time. Doctor Shi didn't see how much the patient was suffering, and Doctor Shi let the patient suffered pain the whole night! This kind of unethical behaviour can boil any reasonable person's anger.'

Doctor Shi let the patient to suffer both immense physical and mental pain!’ Na Na said.

After Na Na stopped talking the staff room was quiet for a while.

Most of the staff widened their eyes and stared at Na Na mysteriously. Na Na felt they were smiling weakly as though they were trying not to laugh.

Confronted by the mysterious looks, Na Na lifted her chin and puffed her chest. Na Na felt proud and she didn’t bother to glance once at Shi Dan Ping.

If Na Na glanced once at Shi Dan Ping then she would have saw him calmly sipping his cup of coffee and his free long fingers flipped through a newspaper.

Liu Nan rubbed her temples and she silently pitied the heroine of the tragic comedy who stood in front of her. On the inside Liu Nan deeply regretted – she regretted she couldn’t chase the simpleton back to the simpleton’s mother’s womb! Because it was the only way to stop the simpleton from wrongly accusing Dr Shi and further offend him.

Zhang Wei Dong was the first one to dare laugh loudly and he excitedly grilled Shi Dan Ping. ‘Last night was tough on you... you were called several times?’

Shi Dan Ping closed his newspaper and reluctantly replied. ‘If not ten times, at least seven or eight times.’

Luo Xing Tao was excited to see someone in trouble. ‘The new young nurse is indeed a passionate and a devoted nurse!’

Zhang Wei Dong rubbed his round belly and looked in Na Na’s direction. ‘The little girl is still new so she didn’t understand the situation. She acted out from a good heart and wholeheartedly cared about her patients. A very righteous person!’

Although Zhang Wei Dong praised Na Na, it was clear to everyone in the staff room Zhang Wei Dong’s tone sounded more like friendly teasing than legitimate praises.

Everyone in the staff room burst into laughter, except for Na Na who was confused and Liu Nan.

Liu Nan’s heart finally softened and angrily scolded everyone who laughed.

‘Enough! Every one of you has an old head on top of their shoulders, but you still tease a little girl. She’s under my protection so don’t tease the little girl.’

Everyone who laughed knew what Liu Nan said was reasonable and finally they retrieved their laughter.

Na Na was still confused. ‘Head nurse, how am I being teased?’

Liu Nan couldn’t believe Na Na didn’t keep her mouth closed and dared to ask how everyone was teasing Na Na. Liu Nan regretted she couldn’t kick Na Na to wake up Na Na’s common sense.

Zhang Wei Dong was choked from refraining laughter, he coughed twice. He explained gently to Na Na. ‘Hey little girl, didn’t you see a copy of the patients’ medical history? Bed three patient’s physical condition post-surgery isn’t a problem, but his mental condition has a little... a very big problem. This morning, someone from the nineteenth floor will come to collect him.’

Zhang Wei Dong struggled to refrain himself from laughing but because he opened his mouth to explain to Na Na, he couldn’t control himself anymore and laughed loudly.

Na Na’s face was bright red from shame. She was so embarrassed she regretted she couldn’t find a hole to fall into. She didn’t want to be in a room full of people mocking her. She hurriedly said ‘I’m really sorry’ then she bowed her head and ran outside the staff room.

It was a rare for everyone to see a person who dared to oppose Dr Shi who owned a poisonous tongue. They were surprised the brave person was a little girl who was thick skinned. They refrained from laughing to the point of experiencing abdominal pain. After the little girl ran off, they couldn’t refrain laughter anymore and from left to right everyone was hunched over and laughed loudly.

Even Liu Nan couldn’t control herself and smiled for a moment. Then she glared fiercely at Shi Dan Ping. ‘The little girl’s heart is genuine, don’t bully the little girl!’

Shi Dan Ping didn’t say anything, but Zhang Wei Dong who was still laughing uncontrollably supported Liu Nan. ‘That’s right. The little girl is actually thin skinned. She ran away because on the inside she feels guilty for wrongly accusing

you... little Ping, hurry up and go see how she's doing!'

'It's none of my concern,' Shi Dan Ping said coldly.

Zhang Wei Dong looked disapprovingly at Shi Dan Ping and lectured his junior. 'How does it not concern you? The little girl is disgraced because of you. She worked through the night without sleep! What if something bad happens to her, what are you going to do? Hurry up and go check if she's ok!'

Shi Dan Ping always respected Zhang Wei Dong. Although Shi Dan Ping was discontent about being forced to do something against his will, he could only casually refuse. 'This morning at half past eight I have a surgery-'

Zhang Wei Dong put up his hand. 'It's not a problem. Leave the surgery to me. You hurry up and go find her. Make sure you console her properly!'

The doctors in the staff room understood Zhang Wei Dong well enough to know clearly Zhang Wei Dong's words hid a deeper meaning than just concern for a framed staff member. All the doctors stared at Shi Dan Ping and laughed louder.

Shi Dan Ping didn't say anything else and ran off to find Na Na. He chose to listen to Zhang Wei Dong, because he was scared of being given a long winded lecture and he didn't know what else Zhang Wei Dong would say to cause more trouble for him if he stayed in the staff room.

Outside the staff room, Shi Dan Ping put his hands in his pockets and slowly walked downstairs.

Na Na ran downstairs from the seventeenth floor straight to the garden at the front of the hospital before she stopped running.

Early morning there weren't many people in the front garden of the hospital. The gardeners maintained the front garden regularly to ensure all the trees looked lush and green. The front garden was like a small forest and there was also a feature manmade rocky mountain. Na Na sat on the bench located at the base of the rocky mountain. She pressed her hands against her hot cheeks and her mind was overloaded with thoughts.

Na Na blamed herself for being complacent. She didn't properly read the summary of her patients' medical history. She learnt how important it was the

hard way, she was thoroughly embarrassed.

Na Na kept replaying in her mind how she caused such a public scene in the staff room earlier. She wrongly accused Dr Shi of being an unethical doctor... she felt her foolish self-righteous state certainly left a deep adverse impression of her for everyone in the staff room.

Apart from Na Na's shame, she also felt a little guilt toward Shi Dan Ping. If she didn't think she was smart and had checked all information related to her patients then she never would have been suspicious about the ethics of the hospital's darling jewel and handsome flower.

The more Na Na thought the more embarrassed she felt. She couldn't control herself, she covered her face and let out a loud crazy outburst. 'Ah! I'm embarrassed to death! I can't live anymore-' She was too immersed in her embarrassment, she blindly kicked something hard and hurt her foot. She uncovered her face, tilted her head back and yelled up at the sky. 'Angels, come and take me with you-'

'Angels are too busy, no time to descend on earth for a trip,' a man joked behind Na Na who sat on the bench. 'More importantly... your little spirit's virtues are still too low. You're not ready to ascend to the heavens as an angel.'

End of Chapter Six (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Seven (Part 1)

Na Na didn't realise someone was behind her until she heard a man's voice. She was too scared to be embarrassed. She jumped up from the bench. 'Who? Who's there?'

Someone appeared from behind the rocky mountain and stood behind Na Na. A bright light shone behind the mysterious stranger and Na Na couldn't clearly see the stranger's physique. She just felt the stranger gave off a comforting warm aura, which melted her fear away.

Na Na reflexively closed her eyes to adjust to the bright surroundings. After she opened her eyes, a man stood in front of her. The man smiled warmly and spoke in a gentle voice. 'Are you a new nurse at this hospital?'

Na Na didn't expect running crazily to the front garden of the hospital early in the morning would attract attention. Then she was worried she disturbed patients resting nearby and her face turned bright red. She awkwardly scratched her head and replied. 'Yes, how did you know I'm a new nurse at this hospital?'

The man laughed in a friendly manner. He pointed at Na Na's name tag. 'The 's' on your name tag gave you away.'

Na Na didn't pay much attention to her name tag before. She bent her head and stared suspiciously at her name tag. 'What's the meaning of the letter s?'

'The 's' on new doctors and nurses' name tags stands for student. The difference between a new doctor and a new nurse is new doctors' name tags are blue and new nurses' name tags are yellow,' the man said.

'Are you a doctor?' Na Na asked.

The man shook his head. 'No, I have an administrative job at the hospital.'

Na Na understood and nodded her head. 'Then are you from HR or the training department?'

The man smiled. 'I have a medical administrative job.'

Na Na's smiled stiffly and she stammered. 'Medical... then you... I... I'm really sorry. I just finished a night shift and I was preparing to go home. Last night I didn't sleep and I was a little frustrated so I...'

The man was amused by Na Na's reaction. 'Don't worry, I'm not responsible for impromptu onsite inspection of staff members' conduct and performance. I'm not going to punish you.'

The man was in charge of reviewing medical examination procedures at the hospital, planning lessons, scientific research and communicating with other hospitals. His most important duties were ensuring medical staff complied with standard health rules and regulations and perform period checks for instances of malpractice.

Na Na ran outside the staff room too quickly and forgot to change out of her nurse uniform. She also yelled crazily in public at the front garden of the hospital and disturbed the quiet surroundings. Her conduct was clearly inappropriate for a hospital staff member. To top it off she was caught by someone from the medical education and disciplinary department!

The hospital was a strict workplace and required staff to behave in an exemplary manner at work. If a staff member was caught making a careless mistake, someone from the medical education and disciplinary department would punish the staff member accordingly to their misconduct.

Na Na was usually an honest worker. She strictly followed the rules and rarely got into trouble from her supervisors. The only times in her life she rebelled was during college, she skipped two classes but she was anxious that whole day when she skipped those two classes.

So Na Na panicked in front of the man who caught her misbehaving at work. She felt like a trapped bird flapping its wings and jumping restlessly inside a cage, she wanted to flee.

But Na Na sighed in relief after she heard the man wasn't going to punish her. She wiped the cold sweat off her forehead and laughed awkwardly. 'I'm Na Na. What's your name?'

'Wei Zhexue, Zhexue as in philosophy,' Wei Zhexue said.

End of Chapter Seven (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Wei Zhexue politely extended his arm to shake Na Na's hand. Na Na was impressed by his long clean fingers and his neatly trimmed fingernails, it showed he had good hygienic habits.

Usually medical staff suffered from the same OCD – they were clean freaks and Na Na wasn't an exception. If Na Na met someone with long fingernails or their fingernails were a little dirty, she'd feel uncomfortable being around an unhygienic person. So Na Na instantly felt comfortable with Wei Zhexue the moment she set eyes on his clean hands and fingernails.

After Wei Zhexue shook hands with Na Na, he sat comfortably on the bench and patted the spot next to him on the bench. 'I heard you said you were frustrated. What happened?'

Na Na sat next to Wei Zhexue on the bench. Early morning the atmosphere and sunlight was good, except the combination was soothing enough to make Na Na drowsier.

Na Na's drowsiness evaporated the moment she remembered how she made a public spectacle of herself. She didn't know how to face her co-workers who mocked her!

Na Na sighed. 'Don't mention it anymore. Staying awake all night during one night shift made me go crazy. I didn't expect to make such a big mistake, I'm going crazy to death.'

'You work in the ICU? Or in the emergency department? Otherwise why would you stay awake all night?' Wei Zhexue asked.

Na Na rubbed her lips and reluctantly explained. 'Right now I'm working in the neurology department... last night I met a patient who has a psychological problem. The patient told me they experienced unbearable pain to death, but their physical condition wasn't a problem. I didn't know, I didn't properly read their medical history and disturbed the patient's doctor's sleep many times. In

the morning I even scolded the doctor a little for being irresponsible and refusing the patient additional pain relief.'

Na Na thought about her foolish behaviour and blamed herself for acting impulsively. 'It was all my fault. If I was a little more thorough, I would have realised there was a psychological problem with the patient. Then I wouldn't dare to do something scary, I wouldn't disturb another person's sleep.'

Wei Zhexue understood what happened from Na Na's brief recount of her situation. 'Don't be hard on yourself. Your intentions were good, you didn't want to see a patient suffering. It's just your good intentions caused you to misunderstand someone, you didn't do it on purpose... others will understand too.'

Na Na shook her head that was under a dark cloud. 'You don't know. The doctor is a little... petty. This time I've offended him, I have no idea how he's going to take revenge on me.'

Wei Zhexue laughed. 'You are overthinking the situation. If you take the initiative to apologise in a pleasing sincere way, no matter how petty someone is, they won't take revenge on someone who shows remorse.'

'How do I apologise in a way to please the doctor?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue refrained from laughing. He felt Na Na was too honest to the point she didn't know how to suck up to a person. He couldn't believe she dared to draw swords with a doctor, and he didn't know how she managed to survive in the hospital for more than half a year.

Wei Zhexue rubbed his chin and purposely stalled for a while before he spoke sternly. 'You can do simple things to show your sincerity. For example help deliver a meal to the doctor, brew tea for the doctor or next time you're on the night shift with the doctor treat the doctor dinner... any of those things will be enough.'

Na Na nodded her head. 'Each morning the doctor drinks a cup of coffee-'

'Then buy the doctor a cup of coffee!' Wei Zhexue suggested and he laughed loudly. 'After you butter the doctor up, the doctor's hands will be too slippery and the doctor won't be able to be shameless enough to lift a hand against you.'

Na Na understood. She realised she had a chance to escape death. If she apologised and bought Dr Shi a cup of coffee the worst he could do was give her a few poisonous words.

Na Na felt Wei Zhexue's solution eased her worries a lot. She smiled brightly and felt grateful toward Wei Zhexue. 'Thank you big brother Wei Zhexue, I'm happy I met you and chatting with you is a pleasure too!'

'I like chatting with you too... later if anything happens, come find me,' Wei Zhexue said warmly.

Na Na scratched her head and she laughed awkwardly. 'Mmm... you're not going to tell someone else? Especially your colleagues-'

Wei Zhexue understood Na Na's concerns. 'Of course not.'

Na Na was in a high mood. She was allowed to take one step and wanted to advance by a leap. 'Hey, if in the future I'm not careful and make a mistake, can I come to you to ask for help?'

Wei Zhexue frowned to appear melodramatic. 'Ha! This little nurse sister is actually not a simpleton.'

Na Na stuck out her tongue and she couldn't stop herself from laughing. Na Na felt Wei Zhexue was gentle and caring so it was easy for her to feel already close to him.

Na Na gazed at the hospital in front of her and she felt a little anxious. She stood and took a deep breath. 'I need to go back and change my clothes-'

Wei Zhexue nodded his head. 'The sooner the better so you can go home and sleep.'

Na Na felt lighter as she walked back to the hospital. But just as she reached the downstairs operating floor, she saw Dr Shi's white shirt, his hands inside his pockets and he walked casually, not too fast and not too slow toward her.

Shi Dan Ping was forced to find the little rabbit, it took him a long time from the seventeenth floor to reach the downstairs operating floor. He didn't expect to easily find the little rabbit.

Shi Dan Ping looked closely at the little rabbit and he didn't see anything

unusual about her. He felt Zhang Wei Dong wrongly assumed the little rabbit ran away embarrassed.

Shi Dan Ping was about to say a few words to tease the little rabbit and still make him appear sympathetic, but before he opened his mouth the little rabbit ran to stand in front of him. She bowed ninety degrees in a sincere manner.

‘I’m really sorry. Dr Shi it was my fault! It was my carelessness that caused you trouble. It was me who misunderstood you... I’m really sorry, I hope you can forgive me,’ Na Na apologised.

Shi Dan Ping was shocked. He lived for many years, it was the first time someone admitted their wrong doing and apologised to him in such a straight forward way.

It was hard for Shi Dan Ping to be shocked, it was a while before he found his voice. ‘What are you doing still bowing your head? Or are you waiting for me to say ‘rise’ before you willingly stand straight?’

Na Na slowly moved her waist and she tried to stand up but she didn’t dare to face Dr Shi. In a blink of an eye she bowed ninety degrees again and explained. ‘I actually don’t dare to stand straight.’

Shi Dan Ping spoke coldly. ‘Are you performing the role of a sacrifice for a cult? It’s one failure after another failure with you. I don’t have any servants who has an IQ like this!’

Na Na nodded her head. ‘Doctor Shi, everything you say is right!’

Shi Dan Ping controlled his poisonous tongue. He felt he was hitting against a bubble’s shadow, he felt powerless.

Shi Dan Ping glared at Na Na, her forsaken state was an eyesore. He coldly chased her away. ‘Why aren’t you in a rush to flee?’

Na Na thought Dr Shi didn’t want to see her so she reassured him. ‘I’m going upstairs to change clothes. I’ll immediately disappear right in front of you-’

Na Na kept her promise, she ran straight to the elevator and disappeared from Shi Dan Ping’s sight.

Shi Dan Ping sighed – he didn’t know what sort of pill the little rabbit

swallowed.

End of Chapter Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Eight (Part 1)

After Na Na left the hospital she went straight home and slept on her bed until the afternoon. Even if Na Na was hungry, she craved sleep more than eating lunch.

Mao Dan returned home from her work shift and she brought home with her a fragrant lunch. Na Na instantly stirred on her bed like a risk of lobsters' eyes zoomed in a cast of crabs or a pack of wolves ready to pounce on a flock of sheep. Na Na's stomach was alert, her saliva was ready to overflow, but her eyes refused to open.

Mao Dan knew Na Na worked consecutive shifts so Mao Dan didn't have the heart to wake Na Na up to eat a hot lunch. Instead Mao Dan adjusted the phone alarm to the highest volume and she put the phone next to Na Na on the bed.

Two and a half hours later the phone alarm shrilled loudly and woke up Na Na.

Na Na was still sleepy, in her drowsy state she crawled out of bed and washed her face. Na Na looked at the time and panicked. She found the lunch portion Mao Dan saved for her, and she quickly ate like she had three hands and two mouths. After lunch Na Na's legs protested but Na Na forced herself to go to work.

It was a long time since Na Na worked long hours without rest so at work she was incredibly sleepy and her body felt wilted. When she was checking the inventory of patients' drugs, she miscalculated and recorded the wrong data several times. After correcting the inventory count back and forth, she finally recorded the right data.

Before Chen Jie arrived at work one of Na Na's co-workers called Chen Jie to inform about Na Na's low concentration level at work, and Chen Jie's guilt immediately resurfaced. Chen Jie clearly knew that putting Na Na in the hands of Dr Shi, it was certain Na Na wouldn't get even half a night's peace.

When Chen Jie arrived at work she saw Na Na's pale complexion and Chen Jie's

guilt increased, because she contributed to Na Na's exhaustion.

In the afternoon new patients were admitted to the hospital. Chen Jie allocated the new patients and recording duties to other nurses instead of Na Na, because Chen Jie wanted to give Na Na some resting time.

Na Na's blurry eyes looked at Chen Jie and Na Na apologised for making mistakes at work. 'Head nurse, I'm really sorry. I know my mind is as sharp as an elderly person, I miscalculated several things... I didn't do it on purpose. I promise for the rest of my shift I'll work harder and not make any more mistakes.'

Chen Jie hastily reassured Na Na. 'No that's not my intention... Na Na, it's because you worked my night shift for me straight after finishing your own shift, I was worried you're overworked. So I wanted to give you a little time to rest. Don't think too much about it.'

Na Na sighed in relief. She thought she made too many mistakes and caused Chen Jie to be unhappy with her work performance.

'If you're not afraid of fatigue, there's some patients who need injections before dinner. You can go give them their injections then you should go eat dinner too,' Chen Jie said warmly.

Na Na was grateful Chen Jie was so understanding. Na Na nodded her head and she went to check on the computer which patients needed injections then she collected the right drugs for the patients.

There were only a few patients who needed injections so Na Na quickly got to eat her packed dinner.

After dinner Na Na went back to work. She prepared a tub of water, sponge and towel for each patient with serious injuries, and she helped clean their bodies. Afterward she updated patients' hospital records and by the time she completed her duties it was eight in the evening.

At nine in the evening Na Na went to measure the patients' blood pressures and at that time most of the patients' visitors left the hospital. But Na Na wasn't off duty until half past ten in the evening.

Na Na rushed home, she was too tired to do any house chores and headed

straight to her bed. In her sleep, she dreamt she did many things to please Dr Shi. Her efforts paid off, he forgave all her offences against him and his smiling face moved her to tears.

Na Na woke up early in the morning and she realised it was all a dream. She wiped the cold sweat off her forehead, got out of bed, washed and changed clothes.

Na Na went to a nearby cafe at the hospital. Whilst she was waiting in line to choose which coffee to buy, she bit her dry lips and her tongue tasted blood. Her heart sighed. Her position as a first year nurse meant the hospital paid her low wages. Then she remembered her good dream so decided to buy the most expensive coffee in the largest cup size.

Na Na's frugality only allowed her to buy one cup of coffee from a vending machine if she was working a night shift, which was less than a dollar. But because she wanted to please Dr Shi, she put aside her frugality and took a gamble on an expensive large cup of coffee for Dr Shi.

Yesterday Shi Dan Ping had a rare whole day off to rest without being called in for an emergency surgery.

The moment a rested Shi Dan Ping arrived in his work office, he took off his shirt to change into his uniform but he heard a knock on his door. He thought it was one of his male colleagues and immediately opened his door with a naked chest.

Na Na was carefully holding an expensive large cup of coffee and she didn't think about the view behind the door. In a blink of an eye Na Na's smiling face turned stiff, she didn't know what to do except stare blankly at the smooth naked chest in front of her... delicate lines, beautifully carved masculine pecs, solid waist curves...

Shi Dan Ping raised his eyebrows, there was no change in his expression whilst he watched the little rabbit's dazed eyes stare at his chest. He spoke coldly. 'Looked enough?'

Na Na snapped out of her pervert mode and she realised who the beautiful naked chest belonged to. Her cheeks blushed bright red and she widened her eyes to calm herself down a little. She passed him the coffee and she stammered

an apology. 'I... I'm really sorry, I didn't know you were... I rushed here to give you this... I wanted to treat you to a cup of coffee.'

Shi Dan Ping stared silently at the suspicious cup of coffee for a while. 'This... is there a problem why it's not drinkable?'

Na Na's small face twitched, she suppressed the urge to fling the coffee onto Dr Shi's face – the coffee she held was precious, even a hundred thousand years later it shouldn't be wasted!

Na Na's maintained her stiff smile, it was more unsightly than if she cried. 'Doctor Shi, are you being serious or joking-'

'To what do I owe the pleasure early this morning? For your kind donation, say it, what favour do you need?' Shi Dan Ping asked casually.

Na Na felt her eyes were truly opened! She was doing her best to overlook Dr Shi's rudeness yet he was making it hard for her to stay civil toward him. She'd never seen someone like him who was given an inch and took a mile!

'I don't need anything,' Na Na said. She laughed awkwardly. 'It's just that I noticed you seem to like drinking coffee so I bought you a cup of coffee as an apology to you... the day before was my fault, I didn't ask about the situation properly and I wrongly accused you. I'm really sorry!'

Shi Dan Ping let go of his suspicions. His eyes that looked down at Na Na was like someone who was doing her a favour. After a while he accepted her cup of coffee and casually put it on a table. 'The one and only big head above your neck isn't a decorative accessory, later before you speak remember to use your brain.'

Na Na nodded her head like a young student attentively listening to their teacher preach.

Shi Dan Ping faced with Na Na's sincere remorseful attitude, he felt satisfied. He was in a good mood and took the rare opportunity to tease her. 'Are you going to continue standing there to stare? I'm giving you notice I changed out of everything before, on the inside I'm only wearing-'

Na Na realised she was still standing there like the sunlight that shone through Shi Dan Ping's office. She also realised his toned naked chest owned a tremendous gravitational force, which shook her soul and weakened her

common sense.

Na Na was teased to the point her cheeks blushed a brighter shade of red and her own stomach rumbled and mocked her embarrassment. She was both embarrassed and angry. She took wide steps to walk quickly to the staff room.

Shi Dan Ping's good mood included a little joy. He quickly changed into his work clothes and carried the cup of coffee to the staff room. He felt the little rabbit finally understood the way things operated, and he was happy the coffee was still warm. He smiled – the little rabbit was indeed fun to tease!

End of Chapter Eight (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eight (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Dan Ping sat on his usual chair in the staff room. He read the newspaper and listened to the morning briefing at the same time. Then he slowly lifted his cup of coffee to his lips.

The strong coffee aroma flew up Shi Dan Ping's nose and added to his good mood. He carelessly drank the coffee – it left a bad taste in his mouth! He nearly choked and splattered the coffee out of his mouth.

Na Na kept her eyes focused on Dr Shi the moment he entered the staff room, because she was anticipating his reaction to the coffee she bought him. She saw him drink the coffee then his complexion darkened and he put the cup of coffee onto the table. He slowly lifted his head and glared fiercely at her.

Na Na was shocked, she didn't understand what the problem was with the coffee she bought Dr Shi – it was impossible for the most expensive coffee that was more precious than her life was not delicious enough to satisfy Dr Shi's taste!

Because Na Na didn't understand why, she could only smile sweetly and her eyes brimmed with tears exchanged a look with Dr Shi's icy glare.

Shi Dan Ping was angry to the point he gritted his teeth – the little rabbit owned an evil heart!

The coffee had a strong coffee aroma, but Shi Dan Ping suffered a secret fear of bitter flavours. The unsweetened coffee was no different from bitter drugs, asking him to drink it was like asking him to exchange his life!

As a neurosurgeon Shi Dan Ping's daily work life was always packed with continuous duties like long surgeries, examining patients and writing medical reports. So he only drank a cup of coffee in the morning to energise his mood for a long gruelling day. He always put a lot of sugar to counteract the bitter taste of coffee.

No one would have suspected the 'living evil' and cold Dr Shi owned a fear. Nor

would they have suspected such a calm and collected Dr Shi loved sweet flavours.

As a consequence of Dr Shi's usual cold demeanour after Na Na bought the most expensive coffee, she didn't add any sugar because she thought Dr Shi didn't seem like someone who liked sweets.

Shi Dan Ping's momentary joy evaporated. He glared at the oblivious smiling little rabbit and he became incredibly frustrated.

Zhang Wei Dong didn't pay any attention to the polar opposite looks Dr Shi and Na Na exchanged. Zhang Wei Dong was solely interested in Dr Shi's confirmation. 'Doctor Shi?'

Shi Dan Ping looked away from the little rabbit and turned to face Zhang Wei Dong. Shi Dan Ping carelessly agreed. 'Ok.'

Zhang Wei Dong was overjoyed and nodded his head. 'Then I'll contact the other people involved and informed them of your acceptance. They'll be able to facilitate anything you need.'

Shi Dan Ping raised his eyebrows and he got a bad feeling. 'Doctor Zhang, what surgery do you want me to perform?'

'You didn't hear clearly?' Zhang Wei Dong asked. He sighed 'Everyone else refused to go. But I knew our little Ping is a good...'

Zhang Wei Dong gave a brief background of the country hospital Shi Dan Ping would be going to perform surgeries and Zhang Wei Dong gave Shi Dan Ping an itinerary detailing Shi Dan Ping's scheduled surgeries.

Shi Dan Ping's heart protested against his negligent ears. His ears didn't hear Zhang Wei Dong's question properly before he carelessly agreed. He didn't think the undesirable surgeries at a country hospital would fall onto his head.

Country hospitals were usually notorious for their outdated medical equipment and poorly maintained operating rooms which didn't comply with standard health requirements. So only a few doctors volunteered to be sent to country hospitals to perform surgeries. In the past Shi Dan Ping always prepared an excuse to refuse going. Shi Dan Ping didn't think a moment's lapse in concentration in the staff room meant he was captured by Zhang Wei Dong to

go to a country hospital.

Shi Dan Ping narrowed his eyes and focused on the little rabbit. He spoke clearly and calmly. ‘I have one condition.’

End of Chapter Eight (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Nine (Part 1)

Zhang Wei Dong was willing to satisfy as many conditions within his ability just to have one of the hospital's doctors volunteer to perform surgeries at a country hospital.

'Ok. This country hospital's location is far away from here, to get there on time there's not much time left to spare. Little Ping, whatever condition you have, say it.'

'It's inconvenient if I go on my own. I'm not familiar with anyone at the country hospital... this young nurse has quick hands and legs, she's very healthy. Let her come with me to the country hospital,' Shi Dan Ping requested.

'No! Na Na is a new nurse, there are many duties she's not familiar with. Besides she hasn't assisted Doctor Shi during one of your surgeries before-' Liu Nan protested.

'She's been trained for more than half a year. That's a month of training in each of the hospital's health department,' Shi Dan Ping reasoned. He smiled coldly. 'If she's a new nurse and travels to a country hospital, it won't be a problem, because her absence at this hospital won't be a detriment. That's why I suggested her.'

Liu Nan clearly saw the pettiness in Shi Dan Ping's eyes. Liu Nan knew if Shi Dan Ping was offended by someone, he'd corner that someone without any mercy. How could she feel at peace putting a little rabbit like Na Na into a wolf's mouth?

Liu Nan wanted to continue to battle to save Na Na, but Zhong Wei Dong raised his hand.

'Stop quarrelling! The two of you arguing back and forth is pointless. Have you two considered consulting the little girl?' Zhang Wei Dong said.

Na Na's confused eyes looked at Zhang Wei Dong then turned to look at Liu Nan and Dr Shi. Na Na didn't understand why she became the topic of

conversation.

Zhang Wei Dong smiled in an alluring friendly manner for Na Na to let her guard down. 'Little girl, Doctor Shi recognises your nursing abilities, he wants you to go with him to a country hospital to assist him during surgeries... a medical practitioner's foremost duty is to treat patients' health problems so you going with him won't be a problem. If you gain more experience in a country hospital, it'll benefit you in the future when you're applying for promotions. What do you think, are you willing to go or not?'

Na Na wasn't clear what the problem was going to a country hospital. She felt it was a noble cause to treat patients in remote areas. After she heard Zhang Wei Dong mentioned future promotions, her mind was made up because it meant her wages would increase and she'd have less financial burdens. She nodded her head enthusiastically. 'I'll go!'

Liu Nan sighed. Liu Nan didn't understand how a simpleton managed to land a job at a heartless hospital.

Zhang Wei Dong's smile was wider than a long piece of string. 'This little girl is still young, it's commendable she's such a devoted nurse! She's a rare find. Doing good deeds, in the future you'll receive countless financial rewards.'

Liu Nan's heart protested – 'What promotions? What financial rewards? It was all a load of crap!'

Liu Nan almost died getting to a head nurse position. Usually most nurses' future involved being running legs for patients!

Liu Nan stared at Zhang Wei Dong's unchanging friendly face and she shook her head. She couldn't believe such a distinguished old man was able to deceive a little girl without an ounce of shame!

Na Na's small face flushed red from Zhang Wei Dong praising her too much. She spoke shyly. 'You praised me too much... helping patients is part of my duties.'

Shi Dan Ping impatiently knock on a table. 'Ok, it's decided. It's getting late, after examining patients there's still surgeries to perform.'

Luo Xing Tao lost his patience long ago. He stood and turned to walk outside.

‘Leave quickly! A trivial matter like this shouldn’t have delayed us from taking care of patients. Keeping the patients waiting so long will only fester resentment.’

The moment Luo Xing Tao left the staff room, many clusters of doctors and nurses followed suit.

End of Chapter Nine (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Nine (Part 2)

Liu Nan calmly led Na Na to the drugs storage room. When they were both inside the room, Liu Nan firmly closed the door, she turned around and lectured Na Na.

Na Na sat down on a small stool. She rested her hands on top of her closed knees and she listened attentively to Liu Nan's lecture.

Liu Nan saw Na Na's innocent aura and Liu Nan immediately wanted to hit Na Na until Na Na understood the trouble Na Na attracted. But Liu Nan faced with Na Na's teary and scared eyes, Liu Nan's heart softened. Liu Nan sighed helplessly and she patted Na Na's back 'Na Na, where are you hiding your intelligence? Zhang Wei Dong said a few sweet words and you were deceived to the point you didn't know which way was west, east, south or north. If you're bullied outside this hospital, who will you have to protect you?'

Na Na's face flushed red and she spoke softly. 'I'm really sorry, I didn't think too much about it... I thought Doctor Shi had good intentions to volunteer to treat sick patients in remote areas. I thought I could help him so I agreed to go-'

Na Na didn't understand what she did wrong. But she followed her instincts she owned since she was young, she believed Liu Nan sincerely cared about her. She understood Liu Nan's stern attitude had good intentions so even though she didn't understand why Liu Nan was worried she'd suffer if she went to the country hospital with Dr Shi, by habit she surrendered and admitted she was in the wrong.

Liu Nan leaned against a table and she shook her head helplessly. 'Na Na, you have a good heart, there's nothing wrong with you being happy to help others... but you can't believe everything you hear! The hospital's work atmosphere is constantly high on a mountain one moment and hits rock bottom the next moment. It's a seductive lure for patients to come and staff members to put in a lot of time and energy to treat patients. But it's a precedent no one wants to be thrown into a fire pit by the hospital. Do you know what it means if you can

avoid a disaster, you avoid it? Not everyone volunteers to go to poor and remote hospitals because they want to ease the suffering of poor patients. The truth is at the beginning of this year no matter if the amount of poorer remote areas increased, not many city hospitals willingly provide financial and medical aid to them. Have you thought why staff avoid going on trips to country hospitals for just two days, even though they get two days of free travel, accommodation and allowance money to spend?’

Na Na felt Liu Nan smiled in a scary way as though Na Na was going to be walking through burning coals. Na Na panicked and she shook her head fiercely.

‘Because the scheduled surgeries at the country hospital have very low probability to be successful. The surgical equipment are limited and aren’t cleaned according to health rules and regulations, which increases the risk of patients getting an infection post-surgery... surgical doctors will shoulder a heavy burden. Even if one incident happens, the doctors will be made accountable and they’ll encounter unreasonable patients and be detained there indefinitely!’ Liu Nan explained.

‘But knowing there are patients who need medical treatment and urgent surgeries, how can others not save them and standby to let them die? Na Na asked softly.

Liu Nan eyes were complex. ‘You can see a person’s life is valuable, seeing someone about to die it’s hard not to try to save them... now do you see why Doctor Shi instead of volunteering, he was forced to go?’

Liu Nan wanted to say to Na Na doctors weren’t angels or miracle workers. It was hard enough for a snail to look after its own shell yet alone carry the burden of another snail’s shell. Doctors were also ordinary humans, they struggled to stay alive themselves so how could they control life and death matters of others? It was common for doctors to have their own self-interests and a desire to preserve their livelihood.

However, Liu Nan was faced with Na Na’s pure and uncontaminated eyes so Liu Nan wasn’t able to say such a cruel truth to Na Na.

Because... Na Na’s pure heart was like a child’s heart, cruel truths would only pollute pure hearts. Even though eventually Na Na would need to go through the

process of unearthing those cruel truths, Liu Nan didn't want to be the heartless one to manually destroy Na Na's pure heart.

Na Na thought about Shi Dan Ping and she laughed cheerfully. 'Head nurse, you don't need to worry! Doctor Shi isn't a bad person. Before we had a small misunderstanding, but we've reconciled! I know you're worried about me being alone with him is a bad situation, but I'm responsible for my decision to assist him in the country hospital... you can be assured, even if it's uncomfortable to be around Doctor Shi, it won't be a problem for me to accompany him for a little while.'

Liu Nan felt it was pointless warning a simpleton who could still laugh even if the simpleton was about to be the main course for Shi Dan Ping's poisonous tongue. If the simpleton was happy to die under his poisonous tongue then why did Liu Nan bother to worry for the simpleton?

Na Na stared at Liu Nan's silent quiet complex eyes for a while and Na Na thought Liu Nan wasn't convinced. 'It's true, we've reconciled! I won't encounter any problems from him.'

Liu Nan reluctantly nodded her head. 'Good.'

Na Na laughed cheerfully and she stood. 'Let's go outside and start work.'

Liu Nan sighed and she walked outside with Na Na.

End of Chapter Nine (Part 2)

Related

part 3

Chapter Nine (Part 3 of 3)

When Na Na and Shi Dan Ping arrived at the country hospital's front entrance, they saw the country hospital's chief doctor and a dozen other staff members were waiting to greet them.

Na Na jumped out of the car and the moment she saw the mountain of gifts waiting for Shi Dan Ping and herself, she was scared to death. Shi Dan Ping calmly got out of the car, he followed Na Na and greeted the group of strangers in his usual cold manner, which intimidated the strangers.

The country hospital's chief doctor laughed excitedly, he put aside Shi Dan Ping's coldness because he was overjoyed to welcome a famous genius surgeon. But before he could open his mouth to speak, Shi Dan Ping abruptly spoke.

'Time is limited, firstly talk about the patient's health status,' Shi Dan Ping said coldly.

The chief's laugh turned stiff. He waved to a man from the group of people behind him to stand closer and he introduced the man to Dr Shi. 'This is the patient's primary physician, Doctor Lu.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. 'Hello. Can I inconvenience you to tell me about the patients' health status?'

Dr Lu wore thick glasses, his hair was sparse, his sideburns were grey and he spoke in a heavy accent. 'The patient's current health status seem to be stable. The test results pre-surgery were good. But the x-rays showed aneurysm in two cerebral arteries.'

Shi Dan Ping frowned. 'How old is the patient? What's their medical history? Any drug allergies?'

Dr Lu was flustered. He didn't remember the patient's age and specific medical history. 'The patient is probably older than fifty years old. His medical history doesn't seem to interfere too much with the surgery... he probably doesn't have any drug allergies. How his previous health checks were performed are unknown,

but he doesn't have a history of hypertension... ah, yes, his name is Wang Yishu-'

'You don't need to tell me the patient's name,' Shi Dan Ping said impatiently. His head ached. 'Are you not certain whether the patient has any drug allergies? Forget it. Take me to the patient's room and show me the patient's hospital records.'

Dr Lu just nodded his head fervently until the chief nudged him.

The chief glared at Dr Lu then he turned around and laughed loudly with Shi Dan Ping. 'There's no rush. Doctor Shi, you travelled a long distance. It's midday, let's eat lunch together and take a break. Later in the afternoon we can go see the patient-'

Shi Dan Ping stood on the spot and he glared at the chief. 'Is it true what Doctor Lu said about the patient's x-rays showing aneurysm in two cerebral arteries? If it is, then you clearly know the seriousness of the situation! Then there's two ticking bombs inside the patient's head ready to explode... yet you still have the mood to treat me to a corrupt lunch and take me sightseeing?'

The chief's face turned red out of shame. He was just following a common practice to welcome surgeons sent from a city hospital. He felt even if his good intentions weren't appreciated, it was disrespectful of Shi Dan Ping to provoke him with a sarcastic attitude. He was a chief of a big hospital fish in a small town pond!

The chief put aside his pride and pretended he wasn't offended. He laughed stiffly. 'What Doctor Shi said was right. There isn't time to delay while the patient is facing a serious health complication... Doctor Shi not only is your medical knowledge vast, you have a high standard of work ethics too, you're certainly setting a good example for us... saving a patient's life should be a priority duty, treating a sick patient until they are healthy is indeed what's most important.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't have patience for trivial social small talk. He glared at the chief and he continued to speak sarcastically. 'You needed me to remind you before you realised what's most important? You certainly have healthy nerves. Looking at your round beer belly... luckily your body proportions are acceptable, otherwise your healthy nerves will take too long to transmit signals from the

brain, and gradually your body reactions will be slower.'

Na Na kept her head bowed, her chin almost touched her chest and she clenched her teeth to stop herself from laughing uncontrollably.

Shi Dan Ping was a 'living evil' with a poisonous tongue, it was hard for an ordinary human to withstand Shi Dan Ping's cruel words. So it was no surprise the chief's complexion paled in defeat, he gave an excuse to flee and he decided before Shi Dan Ping left, he was going to avoid Shi Dan Ping!

The chief abandoned Dr Lu to deal with the unpleasant Shi Dan Ping. Dr Lu felt a cold sweat at the back of his neck despite the warm sunlight shining down.

Na Na felt a little sympathy toward the shaking Dr Lu, but she silently walked beside Shi Dan Ping toward the patient's hospital room.

Shi Dan Ping always maintained a distant attitude at work and he focused on treating patients for them to recover quickly. He hated unproductive social nonsense at work the most so he didn't have any remorse coldly refusing corrupt hospitality.

Inside the patient's hospital room, Shi Dan Ping assessed the patient's physical condition. The patient's physical condition was worse than he thought. It was a combination of poor health facilities, lack of periodic health examinations, if the patient felt dizzy the patient was prescribed temporary pain relief drugs to cope, which led to the aneurysm in two cerebral arteries undetected for a long time.

Shi Dan Ping changed into a blue shirt before he tested the patient's reflexes and asked the patient a few questions. He carefully researched about the patient's medical history and he made a new surgery plan for the patient.

The aneurysm in the patient's two cerebral arteries were quite large. Shi Dan Ping realised the risk of the two cerebral arteries rupturing during surgery was high. Shi Dan Ping discussed his new surgery plan with Dr Lu and Shi Dan Ping explained the likely risks and the poor likelihood of a successful surgery.

Shi Dan Ping scheduled the patient's surgery for the following morning. By the time Shi Dan Ping finished examining the patient and discussing the surgery plan it was three in the afternoon.

When Shi Dan Ping was about to leave the hospital to rest, Dr Lu was in awe of

Shi Dan Ping's genius and Dr Lu wanted to invite Shi Dan Ping to a meal after the surgery but Dr Lu remembered what happened to the chief and Dr Lu didn't dare to open his mouth.

Shi Dan Ping walked outside the country hospital, he glanced at the surroundings and immediately saw the little rabbit sitting under a tree. The sunlight shone on her pink little face, she was napping!

Shi Dan Ping was discontent, since the moment he arrived at the country hospital he didn't get to take one sip of water but the little rabbit dared to sunbake and nap!

Shi Dan Ping walked to the little rabbit and pushed her sleepy head a little too hard because she nearly fell to the side. She opened her dark round eyes wide and she looked like a startled little rabbit.

Shi Dan Ping wasn't discontent anymore. He smiled and he sat down next to the little rabbit and he waited for her to explode.

The little rabbit slowly parted her mouth... she yawned, her eyes were watery and foggy. Shi Dan Ping felt the little rabbit looked even more docile and soft.

Na Na didn't realise she was provoked to wake up so she neglected to rub her head that was pushed a little too hard. She untied the plastic bag on her lap, took out the food and she put it in front of Shi Dan Ping. 'I bought you two lunch dishes with rice, the flavour is still good, go find a place to eat nearby... while it's still warm.'

Shi Dan Ping eyes were complex and he silently stared at the food set in front of him.

'I ate already, this is all for you. It's safe for you to eat,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping gave the little rabbit a scornful glare, as if he cared whether the little rabbit ate or haven't ate yet!

Na Na was a little scared of Shi Dan Ping's glare and she laughed sweetly. 'There's no delicious food here but at least the food looks clean. Eat this for now to fill your stomach. At night I'll go look for a local restaurant that makes more delicious food.'

Shi Dan Ping held the chopsticks stiffly, he maintained his scornful expression, he scooped the food into his mouth and he ate.

Na Na gently exhaled, she smiled brightly and she passed Shi Dan Ping a bottle of water.

The food was too greasy, but Shi Dan Ping was hungry for too long and he forced himself to swallow the greasy food.

Whilst Shi Dan Ping ate and drank, he thought the little rabbit did have a good trait, she knew how to save him a lunch portion. He decided to be a little merciful toward the little rabbit... he'd reduce a little of the severity of the revenge he planned for the little rabbit.

End of Chapter Nine (Part 3 of 3)

Related

part 1

Chapter Ten (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na's work trip expenses were all paid by their hospital. The hospital booked the best accommodation in the small country town. But it was just a small hotel with standard facilities, luckily the small hotel was clean.

The small hotel had a few guests, Shi Dan Ping and Na Na stayed in two separate adjacent rooms at the small hotel. Because there were only a few guests, the entire ground floor looked deserted.

Shi Dan Ping was in his room resting. He leaned on the bedhead and he reviewed the patient's surgery plan. He often wrote notes on the plan, which made it more convenient to write medical reports post-surgery.

After a long time Shi Dan Ping heard a knock on the door then he noticed the sky was dark.

Shi Dan Ping rubbed his eyes, got out of bed and he opened the door. It was a smiling Na Na, she held a hot bowl of noodles.

Na Na stretched her arms out and she presented the bowl of noodles like it was a rare treasure. 'Are you hungry? I made two bowls of noodles, do you want to eat this one?'

Shi Dan Ping's eyes were confused. 'The dinner you bought was this?'

Na Na shook her head and she spoke proudly. 'I didn't buy it. I brought the noodles with me from home... because I knew everything at the hotel would have cut-throat price tags and compared to items sold on trains, the hotel prices are deadlier! Luckily I came here prepared otherwise I would have paid triple the price for common items!'

Shi Dan Ping was speechless – his mouth was powerless to say cruel words.

'It's beef flavoured noodles, very delicious!' Na Na said warmly.

Instant noodles was an oddity. Regardless whether a person liked eating instant noodles or not, a person just needed to smell instant noodles and it

would whet their appetite.

Even Shi Dan Ping took one whiff of the instant noodles and he couldn't control his taste buds.

Shi Dan Ping's indifferent face didn't flinch as he spoke casually. 'Is this the 'more delicious' dinner you spoke about?'

Na Na smiled sweetly. 'Tonight you didn't come out and I thought you were tired so you didn't come out to eat dinner... early in the morning you need to perform a surgery. I wanted to help you a little so I made you noodles.'

Shi Dan Ping was born into a family of medical practitioners. From an early age, his parents often received work phone calls. Despite whatever his parents were doing as long as patients needed them, they immediately rushed to the hospital.

Back then Shi Dan Ping resented the intrusion of his parents' work phone calls. Because it won the attention of his parents, he was neglected countless times and no one asked about his lonely life.

It wasn't until Shi Dan Ping impulsively chose the same work path as his parents did he understand the intrusive work phone calls he hated most was a doctor's perpetual fate.

After Shi Dan Ping was an adult, he was used to taking care of himself. In his memory he remembered his simple desire to have someone think and care about him.

Na Na waited a long time. The steam through the thin lid of the bowl of noodles made it hard for her to continue holding the bowl.

But Na Na was worried Shi Dan Ping hated instant noodles, which was considered as junk food. Usually doctors snubbed junk food and they didn't bother to go near it. They tended to value nutritious food and refused to eat unhealthy food. But as long there was some nutrients in something, they could force themselves to eat it if necessary.

Occasionally when Na Na was hungry during a night shift she could eat a large greasy bowl of noodles from the hospital canteen. Other times in the middle of a night shift she'd share all kinds of snacks with other nurses in the staff room.

So Na Na thought Shi Dan Ping's eyes were complex and he stared silently at the bowl of noodles, because he still felt a little uncomfortable about their misunderstanding and he didn't want to accept something she made. She hastily reassured him. 'I added sausages and shredded smoked pork leg... Doctor Shi don't hate it.'

Shi Dan Ping reluctantly accepted the bowl of noodles and he spoke coldly. 'Ok. Even if you added a lot of things, it won't hide the fact it's still junk food.'

Na Na gently exhaled, she rubbed her hands and laughed. 'It's ok to eat junk food once in a while... Doctor Shi, eat it while it's hot. I won't bother you.'

Na Na turned around to leave, but Shi Dan Ping gripped her wrist. She was startled and she turned around. 'What's wrong?'

Shi Dan Ping held the bowl of noodles in one hand and his other hand held Na Na's wrist. 'Show your palms!'

Na Na opened her hands. Her palms were red pink and there were a few scorched spots.

Shi Dan Ping held Na Na's wrist, he frowned and he didn't say anything.

Na Na wanted to retrieve her hand so she spoke cautiously. 'Doctor Shi, don't worry, before I made the instant noodles I thoroughly washed my hands clean.'

Shi Dan Ping stood speechless for a while. He let go of Na Na's wrist and he spoke sarcastically. 'Didn't you see the tray in your room? A pair of healthy big eyes are wasted on you! Did you think if you burn your hands you can say I bullied you?'

Na Na was scared of Shi Dan Ping's scary tone of voice and she hastily explained. 'I did see the tray in my room... mmm... there was something on the tray that made it inconvenient to use.'

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. He glared at Na Na, he took a step back and he kicked the door closed.

In front of the closed door, Na Na pouted her lips and she fisted her hands toward the closed door. She spoke softly. 'Too difficult to please!'

Behind the closed door, Shi Dan Ping was a little angry – what a foolish little

rabbit! Didn't she know how to use the tray provided by the hotel?

Shi Dan Ping put the bowl of noodles on the table. He glanced at the middle of the table and he saw the tray... on top of the tray were condoms... ok, he understood why the little rabbit thought it was inconvenient to use the tray.

Shi Dan Ping held the chopsticks stiffly whilst he ate the bowl of noodles. He silently scolded the hotel, indeed the hotel couldn't be rated highly – the hotel put more than ten condoms on the tray. Didn't the hotel know how to discreetly put the condoms in a drawer?

Because Shi Dan Ping and Na Na needed to rest for the morning surgery, they couldn't go sightseeing at night. After they ate the bowl of noodles they slept early.

End of Chapter Ten (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Ten (Part 2 of 2)

Past six in the morning, Shi Dan Ping exercised in his room then he ordered two meals for breakfast.

Usually each surgery was unpredictable and Shi Dan Ping didn't know what complications would arise or how long each surgery would take. So he purposely ate a lot to prepare energy for the patient's surgery.

By the time Shi Dan Ping and Na Na arrived at the hospital it was nearly time for the scheduled surgery. He didn't bother with morning pleasantries and he took Na Na straight to the operating dressing room to change clothes.

The country hospital was small and the operating dressing room was both tiny and unbearable. Shi Dan Ping endured the foul smell in the corner of a wall. He quickly changed into his surgical clothes and he walked into the operating room with a mask.

The country hospital in total had less than ten tiny operating rooms. Inside the operating room scheduled for the morning surgery, the sink's primary function was used as a door more than for sanitizing hands.

Shi Dan Ping sighed on the inside. He dipped a brush into an antibacterial bar of soap and he meticulously brushed his fingertips.

The operating room was in such a poor condition, if there was a problem during the surgery it was likely the patient wouldn't regain consciousness.

Na Na stood beside Shi Dan Ping in the operating room, and she prepared the sterile instruments to be used during the surgery.

A catheter (tracheal tube) was inserted into the patient's trachea (windpipe), connected to an anaesthesia machine and the patient laid asleep on the surgical table. Dr Lu shaved the patient's hair and cleaned the surgical site with an antiseptic solution for surgery.

A surgical nurse helped put gloves on Shi Dan Ping's hands and also helped cover the patient's body with a surgical drape, only exposing the surgical site.

Everything was prepared for Shi Dan Ping to start the surgery, but intruders entered the surgical room.

The intruders included the chief and two other doctors. The chief enthusiastically introduced Shi Dan Ping. 'This is Dr Shi, a renowned neurosurgeon. Make sure you record the whole process of the surgery. It'll be used later for others to learn...'

Shi Dan Ping hated when a group of people surrounded him whilst he was performing a surgery. The operating room was a sacred room! It was unacceptable to use the operating room as a place for jokes and letting people take turn interviewing.

Although the chief used the excuse of recording Shi Dan Ping performing a surgery for learning purposes, Shi Dan Ping knew the chief's main purpose was to release the recording to the media to gain publicity for the country hospital. But Shi Dan Ping didn't open his mouth to openly object.

Shi Dan Ping didn't say anything, but Na Na voiced her concerns. 'The operating room is tiny and not sterilized enough to meet health standards. If there are too many people inside the operating room, there's no way to ensure the patient won't get an infection during the surgery.'

Na Na's voiced concerns were a bit understated. The operating room was indeed tiny, surgical tools and drugs were scattered around the operating room. There was barely enough room for a surgeon to perform a surgery let alone accommodate several people.

The chief could tolerate Shi Dan Ping's harsh criticisms about the country hospital, but the chief didn't have much regard for a little new nurse.

The chief laughed loudly and he spoke sarcastically. 'How can our humble hospital compare to a giant hospital? Indeed a tiny temple isn't deserving of Buddha's presence-'

Shi Dan Ping glared coldly at the chief and Shi Dan Ping spoke calmly. 'Chief, you've forgotten to wear sterile surgical clothes before you entered the operating room.'

The chief suppressed his anger provoked by Shi Dan Ping pointing out the

chief's mistake. 'I won't bother Doctor Shi performing the surgery. I still have other duties to attend too, I'll leave first.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he didn't forget to remind the chief about another important matter. 'Can I trouble you to take all the unrelated people outside with you?'

The chief exploded and he opened fire on Dr Lu. 'Doctor Lu, why aren't you following me? Don't let your tangled hands and legs delay Doctor Shi starting the surgery!'

Dr Lu had waited a long time to have an opportunity to see a genius neurosurgeon in action so he didn't want to let go such a rare opportunity.

But Dr Lu knew the chief's pride was wounded and when the chief lost his temper, the chief didn't allow anyone to refuse his order. Dr Lu sighed helplessly and he lingered inside the operating room for a while before he followed the chief outside.

After the intruders left, peace was restored in the operating room. The anaesthetist silently stood in a corner and monitored the patient. An annoyed Na Na fixed the operating equipment the two doctors fiddled with when they took photographs before they left with the chief.

'Did you carefully prepare the drill?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na carefully sterilized the drill then she gave it to Shi Dan Ping. She wanted to ease the tensed atmosphere so she asked questions. 'This drill looks like the same one used by the orthopaedics department... how do you know when to drill and when to stop? What do you do if you drill too deeply and injure the brain?'

Shi Dan Ping turned on the drill and a bee humming was heard. 'It's a self-stopping craniotomy drill. It's equipped with a pressure sensitive clutch, after piercing craniotomy it senses the pressure change then the clutch is activated and it'll automatically stop.'

Shi Dan Ping's eyes were focused and he firmly held the drill. Although most of his face was obscured by the mask, Na Na still felt Shi Dan Ping gave off an intimidating aura.

The old blue scrubs provided by the country hospital looked more fitting for a

butcher to wear, but Na Na felt the old blue scrubs on Shi Dan Ping's tall body wasn't unsightly.

The surgical nurse continually flushed water to rid of debris. Suddenly Shi Dan Ping stopped drilling and took out the drill. There was blood on the surgical site, mixed with brain white matter which looked like which looked like something Na Na would vomit out.

Na Na held back her urge to vomit. 'What happened?'

Shi Dan Ping started the hemostasis (stop bleeding) process. He spoke coldly to the surgical nurse. 'Before the surgery didn't you check all the surgical equipment?'

'No, I don't know-' the surgical nurse said.

'Call Doctor Lu back here!' Shi Dan Ping ordered.

Dr Lu was queuing outside to shower and when a surgical nurse rushed to call him back to the operating room, he was in high spirits.

'How did you check the surgical equipment? Did you know there's a problem with the drill... luckily there's no damage to the brain, otherwise we'll be waiting together to be sued!' Shi Dan Ping yelled at Dr Lu.

Dr Lu's face paled and he stammered. 'I, I didn't check... it's been over a year since the drill's been used. I didn't know there's a problem with the drill-'

'Didn't know?' Shi Dan Ping asked. He laughed coldly. 'The clutch is broken, if I didn't react quickly then the patient would have died!'

When Shi Dan Ping felt the change in pressure but the drill didn't stop, he reacted quickly and took out the drill. But there was still a probability of damage to the brain.

Dr Lu quickly wore gloves on his shaky hands. 'What's the patient's status? Is there a likelihood for a serious injury-'

'Wait until the patient is awake and you'll know what the patient's status is, whether if the arms or legs can still move or not... that is if the patient wakes up and can speak!'

What also alarmed Shi Dan Ping was where he found the first aneurysm. It was

in a very deep artery, not easily isolated and after inserting an aneurysm clip there was a high risk of instant paralysis.

End of Chapter Ten (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

DU – Chapter Eleven (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping isolated the first aneurysm and he guided Dr Lu how to insert an aneurysm clip. 'The aneurysm is too big and the artery wall is thin. Carefully secure the clip to prevent an aneurysm rupture.'

Dr Lu followed Shi Dan Ping's instructions.

'After you secure the clip, remember to carefully check for bleeding because if the artery is burst the patient will be in a critical condition,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Dr Lu under Shi Dan Ping's guidance safely inserted an aneurysm clip for each of the two aneurysms. After Dr Lu secured each clip he carefully checked for bleeding. There was no bleeding so Dr Lu started the process of closing the surgical site. The surgical nurse who stood beside Dr Lu prepared sterile bandages.

Na Na gently exhaled. She sterilized the equipment used during the surgery. 'Doctor Shi, it's good the surgery was a success.'

Shi Dan Ping was recording the results of the surgery. He laughed coldly. 'Success? Let's see how the patient's condition is when the patient wakes up.'

'It was my careless mistake. I should have checked if there was a problem with the drill... I don't know if the patient is severely injured,' Dr Lu said.

Dr Lu's expression was gloomy, he deeply felt guilty because of his mistake he put the patient's life at risk.

Shi Dan Ping's impression of Dr Lu wasn't completely bad. Shi Dan Ping spoke calmly. 'Luckily there doesn't appear to be serious brain damage... if the patient's arms and legs don't respond immediately when the patient wakes up, after surgery if the patient receives good treatments it's likely the patient will recover.'

Dr Lu took off his surgical cap and he used the cap to wipe the back of his neck. 'Despite what happened, the patient was able to have a surgery here. Thank you Doctor Shi-'

‘No need for thanks,’ Shi Dan Ping said coldly. ‘Tomorrow afternoon I’m returning to the city hospital. I’ll leave it to you to arrange the patient’s post-surgery treatments. If there’s a change in the patient’s stable condition, you can contact me.’

Shi Dan Ping went into the operating dressing room and showered. After he changed clothes, he walked outside and he saw Na Na sitting outside waiting for him. She didn’t dry her hair properly, and her wet hair damped her chest. She wore a pale yellow shirt and the water dripped down from her hair, clearly exposed her bra and cleavage.

Shi Dan Ping averted his gaze and he coughed awkwardly. He crouched, tied his shoelaces and he spoke sarcastically. ‘Don’t you know how to use a hair dryer to dry your hair before you go outside?’

Na Na tilted her head to the side to look at Shi Dan Ping. ‘I didn’t want you to wait too long so I rushed here.’

Na Na’s heart erupted – compared to a girl like her, a man like Shi Dan Ping scrutinised looks more than she did. His shirt was too impeccable, she was certain he checked his appearance in the mirror countless times.

What a show off! Na Na didn’t mock him for his excessive grooming, but he hated the way she looked.

Shi Dan Ping stood and he walked to the nearby closet, which stored clean hospital gowns. He grabbed a gown and threw it on top of Na Na’s head. ‘Hurry up and dry your hair properly!’

Under Shi Dan Ping’s intense glare, Na Na was forced to dry her hair properly.

End of Chapter Eleven (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eleven (Part 2 of 2)

After Na Na was presentable, she and Shi Dan Ping walked outside the hospital. They immediately saw the chief stood outside with a group of his staff.

‘Doctor Shi, you’ve worked hard!’ the chief said. He grabbed Shi Dan Ping’s hand and he laughed excitedly. ‘Let us treat you a meal to show our appreciation.’

Shi Dan Ping reluctantly accepted the chief’s invitation and Shi Dan Ping dragged Na Na along to eat with them.

In the small country town there weren’t many upscale restaurants. But the restaurant the chief took Shi Dan Ping and Na Na was considered classy when compared to the small hotel Shi Dan Ping and Na Na stayed in. The chief ordered the most expensive bottles of wine for their table.

Shi Dan Ping knew even the best restaurant in the small country town wouldn’t stock such expensive bottles of wine – they belonged to the chief’s wine collection. Shi Dan Ping understood what happened in the operating room wasn’t intentional, and it made the chief insecure about the chief’s unfavourable fate at the country hospital if Shi Dan Ping leaked about what happened to the media.

The chief was anxious on the inside, he hoped the expensive wine bottles would buy Shi Dan Ping’s silence.

The chief humbly poured wine for Shi Dan Ping. ‘Doctor Shi, you are indeed a genius! Let’s toast to a successful surgery.’

Shi Dan Ping drank a sip of wine. ‘Chief, you praised me too much. The surgery wasn’t a success because of one person’s efforts, Doctor Lu and other people’s efforts need to be acknowledged too... Doctor Lu, here’s a toast to you, the patient’s recovery is in your care.’

Dr Lu quickly toasted a glass of wine with Shi Dan Ping. Dr Lu was close to a retiring age. Dr Lu felt he lived a carefree life and he didn’t feel he devoted his life

to saving people. Over the years Dr Lu met many cold hearted people. After Dr Lu drank a glass of wine he thought about his younger self, he felt even his younger self fell into the same trap as cold hearted people who only did things out of self-interest. Dr Lu buried his ideals to sincerely help others at the bottom of his heart long ago.

Dr Lu thought it was a natural progression from an idealistic new doctor to a cold hearted doctor, until he met Shi Dan Ping. Dr Lu thought even though Shi Dan Ping was a young surgeon who stood at a high position, but Shi Dan Ping was still able to maintain good work ethics.

Shi Dan Ping's cold attitude at the table intimidated the chief's group so they joined forces and toasted Na Na.

Na Na from when she was a child straight to adulthood always followed traditional customs, but only under certain circumstances did she drink alcohol. So faced with a big group of people focusing their attentions and toasting her, she felt pressured to drink the glass of wine that was poured for her. Her alternative option was – escape!

Shi Dan Ping sat next to Na Na and he silently watched over her. But when she was about to go to the toilet to escape from the pressure to drink, he stopped her.

Na Na gritted her teeth and she spoke softly to Shi Dan Ping. 'Doctor Shi, I'm not a good drinker... no, I don't know how to drink. I'm begging you to help me.'

Shi Dan Ping smiled alluringly. He whispered in Na Na's ear. 'No, if I let you go, they'll go after me. If I'm drunk, you'll need to carry me to the hotel... are you certain you can carry me?'

Shi Dan Ping's hot breath on Na Na's ear, made her whole body itchy. 'If I'm drunk, they'll let you off?'

'I have a way to make them back off,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na surrendered, unlike Shi Dan Ping she couldn't think of a way to deal with so many people. If Shi Dan Ping was drunk, she wouldn't be able to escape easily.

Na Na stared at the glass of wine in front of her then she assessed Shi Dan Ping's poker face. She wore a tragic expression on her face, she lifted the glass of

wine and she spoke sternly. ‘Doctor Shi, I’ll be your shield. In return you need to remember to take me with you when you run off!’

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. Na Na took a deep breath, tilted her head back and thought it was better to have a quick death than a painful death – she gulped down the whole glass of wine.

Na Na received a loud applause from everyone at the table, and they all wanted to toast her another glass of wine.

Shi Dan Ping grabbed two tissues, he put it in Na Na’s hand and he teased her. ‘In eight lifetimes you haven’t been drunk, yet the way you are drinking now is too charming.’

Na Na used the tissues to wipe her mouth then she shoved food into her mouth. She softly voiced her resentment. ‘Only someone crazy likes drinking this wine! It’s spicy and bitter like horse urine!’

‘What? You drink horse urine?’ Shi Dan Ping asked sarcastically.

Na Na was speechless.

Shi Dan Ping couldn’t believe the little rabbit – she couldn’t distinguish between good wine and horse urine! The bottle of wine she was drinking was equal to a year of her salary. He felt the wine was wasted on the little rabbit like an ox eating saffron.

The expensive red wine the little rabbit drank was clearly a high quality red wine with a high alcohol concentration – one glass and the little rabbit looked disorientated. Her small face was flushed red. She innocently smiled at Shi Dan Ping and her eyes were watery and foggy.

Shi Dan Ping was startled – the little rabbit was drunk from one glass of wine!

Shi Dan Ping didn’t dare check the little rabbit’s pulse in case she attacked him. He waved a hand in front of the little rabbit’s small face, she slapped his hand.

Na Na stared at Shi Dan Ping for a long time then she abruptly stood confidently.

Shi Dan Ping quickly scooped a bowl of sweet soup to help the little rabbit become sober. But the little rabbit stood, scrunched her nose and she spoke

loudly. ‘Doctor Shi, why do you have such petty eyes? You turned a fart into a large explosion, why do you always find ways to trouble me? You’re truly a bad petty person of the modern era, you’re hateful to death!’

Everyone at the table was speechless and Shi Dan Ping’s face paled.

Na Na was oblivious and she glared at Shi Dan Ping. She slammed the glass on the table. She opened her mouth wide and laughed loudly. Her eyes became misty and dreamy. She drooled uncontrollably. ‘At least when you’re operating you look... you’re handsomeness levels up! You’re super handsome!’

End of Chapter Eleven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Twelve

Chapter Twelve

In Shi Dan Ping's life his complexion rarely changed, until the day the little rabbit was drunk.

The restaurant was silent, because everyone was restraining laughter. But they saw the way Shi Dan Ping's complexion changed so often and everyone laughed loudly.

Na Na was dizzy and she didn't understand why everyone was laughing loudly. She just wanted them to stop, because their loud laughter gave her a headache. She frowned and glared at them. 'Frustrated to death! I remember... Doctor Shi say something poisonous to kill them!'

Everyone laughed louder and some people laughed too much that they nearly fell off their chairs. It was a jolly atmosphere, but Shi Dan Ping wasn't jolly because everyone laughed at his expense.

Shi Dan Ping glared at the little rabbit's small face and he regretted he couldn't swallow her whole!

Shi Dan Ping stood and he pulled Na Na up too. He suppressed his anger and spoke calmly. 'Thank you for everyone's hospitality. Tomorrow we'll be leaving. This little nurse is drunk, I'm sorry we're leaving first.'

'Doctor Shi why are you leaving so soon? You only had a few mouthfuls of food. Stay for a couple more glasses of wine,' the chief said.

'I'm really sorry, we're leaving. Everyone stay here and have fun,' Shi Dan Ping declined.

Shi Dan Ping dismissed everyone's protests and he dragged the little rabbit back to the small hotel.

Luckily Na Na was a good drunk. Despite her honest mouth, she didn't cry or kick a fuss. It made it easy for Shi Dan Ping to take her back to her room like he flew her there since the restaurant was close to the small hotel.

Shi Dan Ping pushed Na Na onto her bed. She rubbed her dizzy head and mumbled incoherently.

Shi Dan Ping took off his glasses and he rubbed his tired eyes. Why didn't he think clearly before? He shouldn't have brought trouble with him!

Shi Dan Ping looked at the little rabbit who caused him extra grief! He couldn't take revenge on her, in reverse it was praiseworthy she was able to embarrass him.

Shi Dan Ping sighed helplessly. He walked to the bed to check whether Na Na was sober. The little girl didn't know what situation she got herself in and she hugged the bedsheet. She scrunched her small pink face, and his mouth was powerless to say poisonous words.

Shi Dan Ping pressed his hand on Na Na's soft and warm cheek. The tips of his fingers couldn't resist and pressed harder on her cheek. Na Na opened her misty eyes and she stared at him.

Shi Dan Ping retrieved his hand. 'Awake?'

Na Na's head ached and she vaguely saw someone stood next to the bed. The person's soothing voice sounded so familiar and she rejoiced.

Shi Dan Ping didn't know why Na Na staring at him made him confused, he was about to say something but she opened her small mouth and she cried loudly.

Shi Dan Ping didn't expect Na Na to clutch onto his neck to the point of almost choking him. He held her shoulders and he gently pushed her back. Then he felt there was something wet on his neck and his hands lost all its strength.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. His hands that held her shoulders, pulled her back into his chest and he gently patted her back.

Na Na felt her patience to wait and her hopes were faraway. On her shoulders were heavy burdens and her future felt bleak. She let it all out and she cried nonstop.

Na Na hugged Shi Dan Ping's neck and she cried on his chest. He felt she held onto him like he was a tree sheltering her from the rain and wind and she didn't want to let go.

Na Na cried on Shi Dan Ping's chest for a long time. Her tears and snot covered his chest. She hugged him tight without letting go. 'You, how can you be this heartless and let me and little Yuan miss you every day... you, my good brother, I'm begging you not to leave me...'

Shi Dan Ping didn't hear everything clearly except for 'good brother' and he frowned. He gently stroked Na Na's hair and he spoke rare comforting words to her. 'Don't cry, I'm not leaving.'

Na Na cried to the point her voice was hoarse, but she hugged Shi Dan Ping's neck tight without letting go. She cried for half a day and suddenly she vomited.

Na Na's vomit combined with alcohol stunk repulsively, and it almost made Shi Dan Ping vomit too. He felt something wet slowly drip down on his chest and it wasn't tears.

Na Na vomited everything on Shi Dan Ping's body. Because she was hugging him, her vomit stuck to her body too. Shi Dan Ping couldn't bear the stickiness and stench, his whole body was about to explode.

Shi Dan Ping's body was rigid for a long time until Na Na finished vomiting, held onto him and she fell asleep. He gripped her wrists and pushed her onto the bed.

Shi Dan Ping held in his breath and glared at Na Na whilst he took off his shirt. Then he went into the bathroom, showered and changed into the bathrobe provided by the small hotel. When he came out of the bathroom, she was sleeping deeply.

Shi Dan Ping glared at Na Na for a long time before he sighed and accepted his fate. He took off her sticky and stinky clothes. He used a dampened face towel to clean the vomit off her body. Then he wrapped the little rabbit in a clean bedsheet and he carried her to his room.

Shi Dan Ping wouldn't have carried Na Na back to his room if her room didn't reek of vomit and alcohol. The bed was still spacious even with two people sleeping on the bed.

Shi Dan Ping laughed helplessly. He felt the little rabbit sleeping on his chest was like a concubine from an ancient dynasty – she was stripped naked, washed,

wrapped in a bedsheet and brought to the emperor's bedroom.

Shi Dan Ping felt a gale passed through his heart. If the little rabbit was a concubine, didn't it mean he became an eunuch who carried a concubine?

Shi Dan Ping's hands trembled, whilst Na Na obliviously slept comfortably wrapped in a bedsheet on top of his chest.

In Na Na's sleep she rolled off Shi Dan Ping's chest, she rolled out of the bedsheet and she rolled back onto his chest. Her smooth body was exposed. He laughed an evil laugh, if she conveniently rolled onto him then why would he object? Without hesitation his hands caressed her smooth and warm skin. Her body under the dim light was like a shiny pearl.

Shi Dan Ping felt it was strange the little rabbit's skin was incredibly soft. Wherever he caressed, her skin was always soft as water.

Shi Dan Ping caressed the little rabbit's skin for a long time before he reluctantly let go, because he refrained himself to death. He pushed the little rabbit over to a corner of the bed then he laid straight on more than half the bed.

Na Na slept peacefully the whole night. In the morning in her drowsy state she rolled over onto something that felt like an opened bathrobe.

But Na Na didn't feel like she was the one wearing the bathrobe, because the hard chest didn't belong to her. She opened her eyes and she realised she was naked! She cried out and she quickly wrapped the bedsheet around her naked body.

Shi Dan Ping frowned and he grudgingly opened his eyes. 'Why did you cry out loudly to death?'

Na Na looked like an innocent girl who was captured by an evil man. She held onto the bedsheet tight. 'You, you, you... you scoundrel! You last night... you toward me...'

Na Na blushed bright red and she couldn't speak coherently.

Shi Dan Ping yawned. He rolled to his side, he bent an arm and propped his head on a hand. He spoke sarcastically. 'You're not beautiful as an angel, toward

you what could I do?’

Na Na was confused, because her body didn’t feel uncomfortable anywhere. She looked suspiciously at Shi Dan Ping. ‘My clothes...’

‘Ah...’ Shi Dan Ping stalled. ‘I took it off.’

Na Na’s eyes widened. ‘You, you, you...’

‘Don’t think too much,’ Shi Dan Ping said casually. ‘Last night you were drunk and vomited on yourself. I was kind enough to help you take off your clothes.’

Na Na choked on embarrassment. ‘You shouldn’t have taken off my clothes! Do you understand males and females are different?’

Shi Dan Ping laughed. He lazily sat up against the bedhead and he spoke calmly. ‘I’ve seen too many naked bodies and compared to you I’ve seen a lot more. Don’t worry, you’re not curvy where you need to be and you’re curvy where you don’t need to be so I don’t even have half a point of interest.’

Na Na was too angry and she puffed her chest. ‘Not curvy? But compare to you it’s curvier.’

Shi Dan Ping laughed and shook his head. ‘You’re comparing chest size with a man... you’re too rich.’

Shi Dan Ping felt it was too long since he laughed so comfortably, the little rabbit was an exception. He couldn’t resist teasing the little rabbit.

Na Na was frustrated and embarrassed. It wasn’t right for her to puff her chest or flatten her chest. She glared at the rotten man next to her.

Shi Dan Ping looked at Na Na’s chest and he spoke sarcastically. ‘Besides, how can you see that as a chest? If that’s considered a chest than it’s a grave insult to females.’

Na Na was speechless.

Shi Dan Ping laughed an evil laugh. ‘What you have there... is like a back with two pimples, I don’t have half a point of interest to inspect it.’

End of Chapter Twelve

Related

part 1

Chapter Thirteen (Part 1)

The angry little rabbit bit a human...

Although Na Na was good natured, it wasn't to the point she could withstand Shi Dan Ping's unruly mouth, his final remark about her chest was excessively cruel. It lit the anger she suppressed for a long time, she stretched her claws and aimed for his sadistic face.

The little rabbit jumped on top of Shi Dan Ping's body. He quickly reacted, he turned his face to the side to avoid her sharp claws. But he underestimated the little rabbit's primitive way of thinking... her two rows of teeth clamped onto his chin.

'Ah!' Shi Dan Ping cried out.

The little rabbit's fangs were dangerously sharp! Shi Dan Ping felt pain on his chin to the point tears nearly flowed out of his eyes.

Na Na was also in pain. Her whole body weight was pressed against Shi Dan Ping's body. She didn't expect biting a lean chin with more hard bones than flesh would be so painful.

Shi Dan Ping pulled Na Na's hair to rescue his chin. He gritted his teeth and he spoke sarcastically. 'How long do you want to put pressure on me?'

Na Na realised her state of dress and she quickly got up from Shi Dan Ping's body, but her knee unintentionally pressed down on his family jewel to the point she nearly ended his ability to pass on the Shi family name to the next generation.

Shi Dan Ping breathed heavily, he endured enough pain and he pushed the little rabbit off him. He spoke loudly. 'Can't you distinguish between what's heavy and what's light? When you go outside do you bring a brain with you?'

Na Na tasted blood inside her mouth, it was vile. She quickly leaned over the bed and spat it out onto the floor.

Shi Dan Ping exploded on the inside. The little rabbit dared to bite him! He didn't retaliate but the little rabbit hated his taste!

Shi Dan Ping in his weak state couldn't bear further devastation from the little rabbit! He slowly moved each leg and rotated his waist. He laughed an evil laugh. 'Believe it or not, I'm letting you know 'on your back' are only two pimples.'

Na Na forced herself to take Shi Dan Ping's cruel words lightly. She gritted her teeth and she knelt beside him. She stretched out her hand but she didn't dare touch him. 'You... are you ok? Right now, how do you feel?'

Shi Dan Ping glared at the bewildered little rabbit who dared to open her mouth. She bit her lower lip because she was worried about him but on her lips like pale pink flower petals... were little spots of dark red blood. She looked like an innocent vampire suppressing her urge to stalk prey at night, strangely he felt it was a moving sight.

Na Na felt guilty when she noticed the bloodstains on Shi Dan Ping's chin. She lowered her head and she spoke softly. 'Do you have a Band-Aid? I'll help you clean the wound so it doesn't get infected-'

Shi Dan Ping grabbed two tissues from the bedside table and wiped the blood off his chin. He coldly refused Na Na's help. 'No need. It's not good to put disinfectant on the wound, it's better to let it heal naturally.'

Shi Dan Ping got out of bed, he walked to the bathroom and stood in front of the mirror. On his chin were deep teeth marks, and there were still a little blood oozing out of the teeth marks.

Shi Dan Ping suspected the little rabbit was sent to him as a retribution!

Na Na got out of bed and she walked to the bathroom, but she only dared to poke her head through the slightly opened bathroom door. She spoke cautiously. 'Can I help you wash it clean?'

Shi Dan Ping stared at the little rabbit for a while then he reluctantly nodded his head.

Na Na smiled sweetly and she hopped into the bathroom. She stood on her tiptoes and she leaned close to Shi Dan Ping's face. She used a clean hand towel to gently wipe off the bloodstains on his chin. After the blood dried, it exposed

two pink rows of teeth marks which made her warier.

Shi Dan Ping lifted his chin whilst the little rabbit cleaned his wound. The gentle movements of her hand melted his anger. The bathroom was narrow and they both stood very close to each other. He felt the little rabbit's slightly cold fingers lightly brushed back and forth on his chin, like her fingers were teasing the bottom of his heart and his whole body felt itchy... he felt the air around him slowly became hotter and thinner.

Shi Dan Ping gripped Na Na's wrist a little too tight and she frowned. 'What's wrong? Did I hurt you?'

Shi Dan Ping looked closely at the little rabbit's small face. It clearly looked like a soft dumpling, he couldn't understand why he caressed it most of the night. In his state of confusion he hastily let go of her wrist and he spoke calmly. 'Enough.'

Shi Dan Ping looked away from the little rabbit to conceal his confused feelings, he resented her for making him confused.

Shi Dan Ping was confused why on his usual handsome face, there had to be deep teeth marks on his chin – clearly laughable teeth marks.

Shi Dan Ping slowly turned his head around to look resentfully at the little rabbit. He spoke calmly. 'Tell me what you think, do I need to have a rabies vaccine injection to treat a dog bite?'

Na Na's mouth twitched. She was angry but she didn't dare to open her mouth. She was the one who bit Shi Dan Ping's chin, if she scolded him then she'd be admitting she was a dog!

'I think... at most you just need another tetanus vaccine injection,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly but he couldn't say anything else to tease the little rabbit.

By the time Shi Dan Ping and Na Na packed their suitcases it was midday. They were too lethargic to go anywhere far to eat lunch so they ate lunch together at the small hotel's restaurant. After lunch they collected their suitcases and checked out of the small hotel. Unexpectedly before they could leave the small hotel, the chief arrived at the lobby and delayed their departure.

End of Chapter Thirteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirteen (Part 2 of 2)

The chief helped Shi Dan Ping and Na Na put their suitcases in their driver's car. The chief gave them many local products as gifts and he patted Shi Dan Ping's arm. 'Doctor Shi, please accept some gifts from this small country town.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. 'Thank you.'

The chief glanced at Na Na then he glanced back at Shi Dan Ping who had a clear wound on the chin, the chief immediately laughed slyly.

Shi Dan Ping raised his eyebrows and he spoke coldly. 'Chief, is there anything else? It's getting late, we need to leave.'

'Doctor Shi it's rare for you to visit this small country town. But I've been a bad host and haven't taken you 'sightseeing'... luckily the patient's surgery was successful and the patient's in a stable condition,' the chief said.

Shi Dan Ping knew the chief didn't come to send him off, the chief came because the chief was still worried about what happened during the surgery being leaked. 'Last night we've already agreed the surgery was successful. Chief, you don't need to worry, I'm only interested in treating patients. Anything unrelated to the patients' health is none of my concern, I don't have loose lips.'

The chief felt reassured and he quickly opened the car door for Shi Dan Ping and Na Na. 'I won't detain both of you anymore, have a safe trip and when you're both free come visit again.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he sat in the backseat of the car with Na Na.

On the way back to the city hospital, the simpleton Na Na reflected about the patient's surgery and she realised the chief's real purpose to send them off.

Na Na didn't have a high regard toward the chief. She felt the chief was too self-centred. She frowned and she spoke softly. 'I don't know how someone like him became chief.'

Shi Dan Ping closed his eyes and he sat back against the backseat to rest. 'Only

someone with the same 'special talent' as him can be chief.'

The chief needed to be self-centred even if it risked patients' lives. His 'special talent' was competing to get to the top at the expense of everyone else, and no dirty tactic was tabooed to him. Otherwise he wouldn't survive in his position as a chief of a hospital.

Na Na preferred to see the good in others. Although she didn't understand completely what Shi Dan Ping meant by 'special talent' but she thought it wasn't something clear cut as black and white, it laid between the grey shade.

Na Na was drowsy and she quickly fell asleep. In her sleep she leaned her head on Shi Dan Ping's shoulder.

Shi Dan Ping opened his eyes and he stared at the unguarded little rabbit who was sleeping peacefully and he didn't have the heart to push her head away from his shoulder.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. He let the little rabbit sleep in any comfortable position she wanted. Later the little rabbit leaned more than half of her body on his chest and she slept comfortably and deeply.

When the car reached the city, the night sky was dark and Shi Dan Ping gave the driver directions to the hospital.

At the hospital Shi Dan Ping and Na Na got out of the car and the driver unloaded their suitcases.

Na Na rubbed her eyes and she yawned. 'Thank you for bringing me back-'

Na Na didn't get to finish saying her thanks, when a young tall and slender girl stood in front of them. The girl had her hands in her pants pockets and her eyes looked wise.

'Why isn't this the expert who specialises in saying cruel words?' the girl asked.

'Stomach opener expert,' Shi Dan Ping greeted.

Na Na looked back and forth at the girl and Shi Dan Ping. 'Who is this lady?'

The girl looked at Na Na, smiled and put out her hand. 'I'm Shi Dan An from the gastroenterology department.'

Na Na shook Shi Dan An's hand and Na Na realised Shi Dan An was indeed a gastroenterologist who specialised in opening stomachs.

Na Na was too focused on Shi Dan An's job and she neglected to react to the fact that Shi Dan An had the same family name as Shi Dan Ping. 'You and Doctor Shi...'

Shi Dan An shrugged her shoulders helplessly. 'It's a misfortune having to acknowledge he's my older brother.'

'Hello Doctor Shi, I'm Na Na and I'm a new nurse rotated to the neurology department-' Na Na said.

'Enough!' Shi Dan Ping said. 'I can't even finish something in peace. Quickly disappear!'

Shi Dan An's sharp eyes noticed the wound on her brother's chin. She was momentarily shocked. Then she laughed loudly at the sight of her brother in trouble. 'My big brother, is it really you? You look particularly happy today. So it's hard to fault me for thinking you don't look unsightly today as you usually look.'

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. 'That's right. Just looking at how you and I don't look anything alike, of course I would look a lot less unsightly.'

Shi Dan An was used to losing to her brother when it came to dishing out cruel words. So she turned her attentions to the little nurse who stood beside her brother. 'Big brother, I haven't seen you for a few days and your taste has changed. You two should hold back a bit, don't leave visible wounds.'

'Little sister, you're thinking too much. I was just careless when I was shaving,' Shi Dan Ping lied.

Shi Dan An laughed mockingly. 'Big brother, don't forget we're both doctors... if I can't distinguish between a wound from someone biting your chin and a wound from a razor then my 'stomach opener expert' title is just for show.'

'I was lazy to answer. I didn't want to admit I was bitten by a dog because it'll make me look foolish,' Shi Dan Ping said calmly. 'I thought you'd understand the situation that I was just making an excuse. I didn't think you didn't understand the situation to this extent.'

Na Na's tongue was numb from listening to the Shi siblings exchange words. She felt Shi Dan Ping and Shi Dan An were definitely siblings, one sibling opened heads and the other sibling opened stomachs... they even scolded people in the same deadly manner. The Shi family was indeed a colourful bunch!

'OK big brother, I won't bother you two,' Shi Dan An surrendered. 'Na Na, I really like you already. When you're free come find me for a chat.'

Na Na nodded her head and she wanted to say a few courteous words to Shi Dan An, but Shi Dan Ping dragged Na Na away from Shi Dan An.

'Big brother, why are you quickly disappearing?' Shi Dan An asked loudly and she laughed triumphantly.

Shi Dan Ping heard his little sister's triumphant laugh, it gave him a headache and he strode faster.

Shi Dan Ping dragged Na Na straight to her home. Then he discarded her and he quickly left without saying anything.

End of Chapter Thirteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Fourteen (Part 1)

After Shi Dan Ping and Na Na returned from their country trip, Na Na was given a day off. Liu Nan thought Shi Dan Ping would have given Na Na a lot of trouble during the country trip so Liu Nan called Na Na on the phone, offered Na Na comforting words and she said to Na Na not to worry about anything and just have a good rest.

Na Na was excited to have a day off after being physically and mentally drained from a two day country trip. She was too excited that she couldn't wait for Mao Dan to finish work and eat together before going to Na Yuan's childcare centre which also facilitated preschool classes.

Na Na took the bus to buy many fruits and two sweet pastries. Afterward she went to Na Yuan's childcare centre and she waited for Na Yuan's preschool class to be dismissed.

Na Yuan's childcare centre was close by to Na Na's family home and when she was Na Yuan's age she also went to preschool there.

Many parents and guardians arrived at the childcare centre, they closed the high gate behind them and they waited to pick up their children and their young relatives. The moment the bell rang, which signalled preschool classes were dismissed, a troop of little children rushed out of their preschool classes and they ran to the gate.

Na Na carefully protected the sweet pastries in her hand and she dodged the little children running to their parents and guardians.

Little dumpling Na Yuan carried a small blue school bag on his back. Unlike the other excited little children, he kept his head down and he walked slowly to the gate.

'Little Yuan!' Na Na called excitedly.

Little dumpling Na Yuan lifted his head, his little round face lit up with joy, his adorable lips opened wide in surprise and he ran to Na Na.

Na Na quickly ran toward Na Yuan and nagged at the same time. 'Don't run so fast, be careful you don't run into another person.'

Na Yuan was overjoyed and he hugged Na Na's leg. 'Little aunt, finally you're back!'

Na Na squatted, she hugged Na Yuan and kissed his cheek. She teased the happy Na Yuan 'Are you sad to have me back?'

Little dumpling Na Yuan felt like he hadn't seen Na Na for a long time. So he was in a good mood and let her put saliva on his cheek. He laughed happily. 'Happy! Little aunt, I missed you a lot!'

Na Na beamed and she gently waved the box of sweet pastries in front of Na Yuan. 'Aren't you my nephew who loves to eat chocolate cake the most? Let's go home!'

Na Yuan raised one of his little hands and held onto the box of two chocolate pastry cakes that was too big for his little hand. He hugged Na Na's neck with his other little hand. He rubbed his cheek against her cheek. 'Little aunt, I'm really tired, I don't want to walk. Little aunt, can you carry me for a little while? When you're tired, I'll walk on my own.'

Although little Yuan just turned five years old, Na Na had a petite body and both her arms and legs were short. So it took a lot of energy for her to carry her little nephew back home.

But little Yuan rarely asked Na Na for anything and she felt like she hadn't seen him for a long time so she couldn't refuse his simple request. She carried his school bag on her back then she lifted him and propped his little bottom on her arms. He beamed, hugged her neck, swung his little legs and he excitedly called out. 'Let's go!'

Na Na slowly carried Na Yuan outside the gate. There were still a few little children waiting inside the gate, Na Yuan waved bye to them. 'Someone came to pick me up, I'm leaving first, see you later!'

Na Na faced with little Yuan's boasting with his little friends that he had someone to take him home made her heart ached with guilt and sorrow.

In the past there was always someone who waited to pick up little Yuan from

the childcare centre every day, they'd tease and play with each other and little Yuan would sit on their shoulders and on the way home they'd joke and laugh with each other.

But recently, little Yuan walked home on his own whilst his little friends excitedly went home with someone. Gradually little Yuan became dejected, and hid his loneliness in front of his happy little friends.

Na Na's heart ached because her little nephew had to experience psychological pain at such a young age.

Na Na rubbed her forehead against the top of her little nephew's head.

After Na Na carried little dumpling Na Yuan passed the childcare centre, he couldn't see any of his little friends and he quickly asked to be put down to walk on his own.

Na Na's arms were sweaty and she exerted most of her energy just to carry little Yuan a short distance. She slowly put him down on the ground, she held his hand and they slowly walked together the rest of the way home.

End of Chapter Fourteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Fourteen (Part 2 of 2)

The warm spring days were taken over by the hot summer days. Luckily on the walk home, Na Na and Na Yuan encountered cool breezes.

‘Little Yuan, have you been listening to Mrs Chen?’ Na Na asked.

Mrs Chen was an elderly neighbour who lived adjacent to Na Na’s family home. Growing up Mrs Chen was like a grandma to Na Na. When something unfortunate happened to Na Yuan’s parents, the good natured Mrs Chen stepped in and helped Na Na look after Na Yuan.

Na Yuan nodded his head. ‘I’m a good listener. Mrs Chen can’t stand and walk properly, every day I help Mrs Chen walk downstairs to buy things... little aunt, this time you’re back, can you not leave again?’

‘Why? You miss me too much?’ Na Na asked.

‘Um,’ Na Yuan said. He scrunched his little round face. ‘Mrs Chen doesn’t cook delicious food... little aunt, I really don’t want to eat boiled eggs anymore.’

Na Na rubbed her little nephew’s head. ‘Be good. Little children shouldn’t be picky with food or they won’t grow taller.’

Na Yuan pouted his lips. ‘Can’t I eat a little less? When you’re not here, Mrs Chen boils me an egg every day, it’s really hard to eat it every day.’

Na Na sighed helplessly. ‘Tomorrow I’ll braised eggs in tea and I’ll put it in the freezer. All Mrs Chen needs to do is heat it up for you. What do you think?’

Na Yuan thought compared to Mrs Chen’s bland boiled eggs, his little aunt’s flavoured eggs were a lot yummier. He reluctantly nodded his head.

Na Na thought cooking and freezing food for little Yuan wasn’t a solution. Little Yuan was still very young, he needed a lot of nutrients to grow healthy and he shouldn’t be separated from his relatives. Beside, Mrs Chen was at an advanced age and it was hard for Mrs Chen to stand and walk. Mrs Chen owned a big heart but it couldn’t compensate her poor physical condition.

But Na Na and Mao Dan's accommodation provided by the hospital wasn't a suitable place to raise Na Yuan. Mao Dan could barely stand the bugs crawling around their home, and Mao Dan was looking for somewhere else to live, let alone a young boy who deserved to live in a clean home. Also Na Yuan's childcare centre wasn't close to Na Na and Mao Dan's home. It wasn't practical for Na Na to commute from work to Na Yuan's childcare centre.

Na Na felt helpless and sad. If only misfortune didn't hit little Yuan's parents... little Yuan deserved to be a lively and a carefree young boy... he wasn't supposed to feel lonely and sad.

'Little aunt!' Na Yuan called. He pulled Na Na's hand and he wanted to cheer her up. 'Little aunt, don't frown. I love eating your tea flavoured eggs!'

Na Na held little Yuan's soft little hand. Although she felt weak, just being able to hold his hand energised her and gave her strength to endure. 'Little Yuan is good!'

Na Na grew up with ordinary parents, they weren't rich but they clothed and fed her and most importantly they gave her a loving home. Her dad used to be a soldier until he was injured and taken to a hospital for treatment. Whilst her dad was in hospital, he met her mum who was a young nurse. Her parents fell in love, got married and they conceived her older brother and herself. The four of them lived a simple and happy life.

When Na Na and little Yuan arrived at Mrs Chen's house, Mrs Chen was happy to see Na Na. Na Na let little Yuan play on his own whilst she unpacked the soft fruits she bought for Mrs Chen.

'Each time you come here you always buy too many things. The milk you bought last time, little Yuan hasn't drank it all yet,' Mrs Chen said.

Na Na washed, peeled and cut some of the soft fruits for Mrs Chen. 'Granny are you sick of me?'

Mrs Chen knocked Na Na's head. 'How can I? I'm worried you're wasting food, little Yuan can't eat it so much.'

'Granny, I bought these for you,' Na Na said.

Mrs Chen ate the mango Na Na cut. 'Little girl, you're too courteous!'

‘Granny, this isn’t me being courteous. This is me being filial... apart from granny, who else can I be filial to?’ Na Na said.

Mrs Chen sighed. ‘Foolish little girl. You need to live a good life. If you don’t think about yourself then think about little Yuan. He’s still too young, he needs all this more than me. You should save-’

Na Na didn’t want Mrs Chen to worry so she diverted Mrs Chen’s attention. ‘Granny, today I came here to cook dinner. What do you want to eat?’

Mrs Chen sighed and let Na Na cook in peace. Na Na cooked a lot of dishes Mrs Chen and little Yuan loved to eat like salt and peppered ribs. But little Yuan spoiled his appetite by eating two large chocolate pastry cakes before dinner.

Na Na was both frustrated and wanted to laugh at little Yuan’s sweet habit. After dinner she took him for a walk to digest.

Na Yuan was excited to walk with his little aunt, and he dragged her everywhere around the neighbourhood. On their walk, he patted the neighbours’ cats and dogs and mimicked bird sounds.

When Na Na took little Yuan back to her family home, he was still restless and he wanted to play with her more before sleeping. She knew although he had Mrs Chen to look after him, and he had a lot of little friends at the childcare centre, he still felt lonely. So each time she came to visit him, he was always excited and happy.

Na Na bathed little Yuan. After his bath, they played together until he was sleepy. She put him to bed and lulled him to sleep. She fell asleep not long after he slept.

When Na Na was in deep sleep, she heard someone was crying and calling for her. ‘Little aunt, it hurts...’

Na Na was startled awake. On the bed she saw little Yuan’s face was pale and he pressed his hand on his cheek.

Na Na sat up and put her palm on little Yuan’s forehead, it was very cold. ‘Where does it hurt?’

Little Yuan let go of his cheek and Na Na saw his cheek was swollen. He was in

pain to the point tears were pouring down his cheeks like rain. 'It's really hurts. Little aunt, hurts too much...'

Na Na gently tilted little Yuan's cheek toward the dim light and she spoke softly. 'Don't be scared. Open your mouth for me to see.'

Na Yuan opened his mouth a little, but it hurt too much for him to open his mouth wide.

Na Na looked closely at little Yuan's teeth, he had cavities. No wonder he was in a lot of pain and she couldn't believe he was able to eat many sweets for dinner despite his cavities.

Na Yuan cried loudly. 'Hurts to death, little aunt...'

Na Na hugged little Yuan and she held his hands so he couldn't hurt himself more. 'Don't cry, it'll make it hurt more. I'll think of a way so it won't hurt, ok?'

Little Yuan was too young for strong pain relief so Na Na made a makeshift ice pack by wrapping a towel around ice cubes.

The cold from the icy towel lessened the pain and little Yuan's cry gradually became softer.

Na Na sat against the bedhead and little Yuan laid on top of her chest. She patted his back with one hand and held the icy towel on the side of his jaw and mouth with the other hand. 'This is what happens when you don't brush your teeth every day, you get a lot of teeth cavities. You ate many sweets for dinner too, it'll be strange if your mouth doesn't hurt.'

'I brush my teeth every day,' Na Yuan denied softly.

'You actually brush your teeth every day?' Na Na asked suspiciously.

Little Yuan kept his mouth closed so Na Na couldn't see his teeth.

Na Na knew little Yuan was in a lot of pain and she decided to nag him more after he was healthy.

'Does it still hurt?' Na Na asked.

Little Yuan nodded his head and scrunched his nose. 'Hurts...'

Na Na sighed. She gave the icy towel for little Yuan to hold then she put on a

jacket and went downstairs to buy a weak pain relief for him.

Luckily there was a small chemist nearby that opened late. She bought the weak pain relief and when she returned to her family home, she saw little Yuan rolling around and crying on the bed.

Na Na rushed to little Yuan and she gently rubbed the weak pain relief cream on his gums. He stuck out his tongue and scrunched his face. 'Really bitter, little aunt I don't want-'

Na Na used a clean towel to gently wipe little Yuan's face. 'A little bitter is better than hurting to death. Don't swallow and let it dissolve or it won't take the pain away.'

The weak pain relief was the same kind Na Na's mum used to buy for her when she was a child and had cavities. It didn't treat the root of the pain, but it was a temporary solution until she could take little Yuan to the dentist in the morning.

Little Yuan stopped crying. 'Can I rinse my mouth yet?'

Na Na got a cup of water and an empty bowl for little Yuan to rinse his mouth. 'Does it still hurt?'

Little Yuan scrunched his face. 'Still hurts a bit...'

Na Na looked at the clock on the wall, it was the middle of the night and if little Yuan didn't sleep it'd be morning soon.

Na Na put the cup and bowl on the bedside table, turned off the light and she patted little Yuan's back. 'Go to sleep. When you wake up, I'll take you to a dentist. The dentist will treat your teeth and gums and it won't hurt anymore.'

End of Chapter Fourteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Fifteen (Part 1)

The following morning, Na Na called Na Yuan's childcare centre and she informed his preschool teacher he was going to take a sick day off from school. Afterward Na Na and Na Yuan took a taxi straight to the hospital, because there was a dental clinic located inside the hospital.

When Na Na and Na Yuan arrived at the hospital, they took an elevator to the dental clinic. Na Na sighed, as expected the waiting line was long.

Na Na resorted to using a back door connection to get little Yuan an earlier appointment to see the dentist. She took little Yuan to the staff room on the seventeenth floor and he sat down on a chair.

'Be good, stay here for a little bit. I'll change into a nurse uniform then I'll come back here to take you to see a dentist,' Na Na said.

Little Yuan nodded his head and he obediently waited for Na Na in staff room. Na Na quickly went to the change room to change into a nurse uniform. But Liu Nan was checking patients' data on the computer and Liu Nan was surprised to see Na Na at work on a day off. 'Why are you here? Aren't you meant to be at home resting?'

'I was at home resting, but in the middle of the night my nephew's teeth hurt. I brought him to the hospital's dental clinic... there were many patients, if we waited in line we don't know if the dentist can see him today. So I came here to change into a nurse uniform,' Na Na said.

A doctor and a nurse's uniform was the quickest form of ID at the hospital. It was easier for medical staff to jump the queue at the hospital, because all medical staff understood the time constraints their colleagues were under.

Liu Nan nodded her head, she clearly understood Na Na's plight. 'Let me help you, I'll call the dental clinic to save the first available appointment for your nephew.'

Since Na Na started working at the hospital, she hadn't taken a sick day off.

But she knew with Liu Nan's help, little Yuan would quickly be able to see a dentist.

Liu Nan rang the dental clinic and she got an appointment for Na Na's nephew. She hung up the phone and she saw Na Na come out of the changing room in a nurse uniform. 'Where's your nephew?'

'He's waiting in the staff room,' Na Na said.

'Ah, I forgot to ask you, what troubles did you and Doctor Shi faced during the two day trip away?' Liu Nan asked.

Na Na laughed. 'What troubles could there be? The country hospital's only regret was not being able to put Doctor Shi on an altar to worship him.'

Liu Nan was skeptical. 'Doctor Shi has a bad personality, he's cold and he has a rotten mouth. The more someone sucks up to him the more poisonous his words are. It won't take much for them to figure him out... you must have seen an eyeful while you were there.'

'How did you know?' Na Na asked.

Liu Nan laughed loudly. 'My guess was actually right... it must have been tough for you. You're not completely a simpleton, you know how to retaliate-'

'I wasn't angry... like you said, Doctor Shi's rotten mouth didn't let anyone off, but he has a good heart. His rotten mouth is a bad habit, I'll just ignore it,' Na Na said softly.

Liu Nan sighed. Indeed she couldn't speak to Na Na on the same wavelength. She felt like the more she was around Na Na, the less intelligent she felt. 'How did Doctor Shi get a wound on his chin?'

Yesterday when Liu Nan's work shift nearly ended, Doctor Shi arrived at the hospital and she saw something pink on his chin, it was a wound from a deep teeth bite.

Liu Nan was in a state of disbelief. Who was sick of living to dare to bite Doctor Shi? Not just a bite but a deep bite!

Liu Nan stared at the two row of teeth marks on Doctor Shi's chin for a long time. She joked and probed for what felt like half a day to entice him to confess.

But not only was his mouth poisonous, it could also be sealed, wilful and charming – his mouth didn't reveal one word about the teeth marks on his chin!

Liu Nan was curious to death, and it was hard for her to sleep last night. Luckily Na Na came to the hospital on a day off and Liu Nan was eager for Na Na to shed light on the mystery about Doctor Shi's chin.

Na Na thought about how Shi Dan Ping's chin was wounded and as a result she remembered how they slept together on the same bed for a whole night. Her small face flushed red and she didn't know what was the right reply. 'About the... head nurse, what did Doctor Shi say?'

Liu Nan was wise, even Shi Dan Ping yielded to Liu Nan most of the time. The moment Liu Nan saw Na Na's round eyes widened, Liu Nan guessed what happened.

Liu Nan smiled in a friendly manner and she pulled Na Na closer. 'Little Ping didn't want to say anything... at least I could guess what happened. I understand available young men like him, anything can happen outside of work, it's common for them to have casual affairs. But he let a female bite his chin and leave such clear teeth marks, if the hospital's disciplinary board found out he was frolicking during a work trip, it'll affect his position at the hospital. You know very well how serious the hospital deals with misconduct, if anything happened-'

Na Na was worried to the point of dizziness, she was worried she caused trouble for Dr Shi. She didn't want patients to lose a good doctor because she ruined his career with her mouth. 'He didn't, head nurse it's just a misunderstanding! Doctor Shi has teeth marks on his chin because I wasn't careful and bit him...' She paused and scratched her head. Her cheeks blushed pink and she spoke softer. 'The country hospital invited us to eat at a restaurant, I drank wine... I wasn't careful and I bit Doctor Shi's chin and left teeth marks-'

Liu Nan was overjoyed, she laughed loudly and patted Na Na's shoulder. 'You're a good drunk! Keep at it!'

'Huh?' Na Na asked.

Liu Nan was overjoyed, because it was about time Dr Shi met trouble. 'To me, he's been an eyesore for a long time! Enough about the eyesore, unless you want to neglect your nephew.'

Na Na quickly followed Liu Nan to the staff room and little Yuan was still waiting on the same chair. ‘Little Yuan, this is aunty Liu.’

Na Yuan in front of strangers was always polite and sweet. ‘Hello aunty Liu.’

Na Yuan’s charming smile and sweet nature was loveable, not many females could resist. Especially Liu Nan who was a mum for many years, her heart overflowed, and she couldn’t resist rubbing Na Yuan’s adorable cheeks. She rubbed his cheeks for a long time before she reluctantly let go.

Na Yuan endured the weird aunty fiercely rubbing his cheeks and he wasn’t able to escape until his little dumpling face turned pink.

The moment Na Yuan escaped, he gave up his seat for aunty Liu, he hid behind Na Na and he hugged Na Na’s leg. ‘Little aunt, let’s hurry and go see a dentist. My teeth is starting to hurt again...’

Liu Nan’s heart overflowed again, she quickly escorted Na Na and Na Yuan to the elevator.

End of Chapter Fifteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Fifteen (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na and Na Yuan stood in front of the dental clinic reception desk and Na Na was indecisive which dentist to choose from the list for Na Yuan. Because the earliest free appointment time was before closing time and most of the dentists were available at that time.

‘Na Na!’ Wei Zhexue called.

Na Na turned around and she was surprised it was Wei Zhexue who was smiling and waving at her and little Yuan. ‘What are you doing here? Are you checking up on the dental staff?’

‘That’s right and I happened to see you while you’re on duty wandering around,’ Wei Zhexue joked.

Na Na knew Wei Zhexue was teasing her so she wasn’t worried about being reported. ‘I’m not working today. I took my nephew here to have his teeth examined.’

‘Hello uncle,’ Na Yuan greeted politely.

Wei Zhexue smiled warmly and he rubbed Na Yuan’s head. ‘Hello little friend.’

‘All the dentists’ waiting lines are too long... come with me, I’ll take both of you directly to see my dentist,’ Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na held little Yuan’s hand and they quickly followed Wei Zhexue. ‘Are we holding up your work?’

Wei Zhexue shook his head. ‘It’s nothing. I finished work for the day. I came down here to help pick up drugs for someone then I saw you.’

Doctor Zhao just finished treating a patient and he saw his nephew’s head poked through his office door. ‘Uncle Zhao, you’re still working?’

‘Little boy, do you have a problem with your teeth?’ Dr Zhao asked warmly.

Wei Zhexue shook his head. ‘This time it’s not me, it’s my little friend.’

Dr Zhao assessed Na Na and Na Yuan who stood behind his nephew and he understood. He laughed happily. 'Your girlfriend? Hurry and bring your little friend here.'

Na Na's cheeks blushed red, she wanted to clear the misunderstanding but Wei Zhexue laughed. 'Don't be scared, Doctor Zhao will examine you for a bit and it won't hurt.'

Na Yuan laid on the patient's chair, he gripped his little aunt's hand and he opened his mouth for the dentist to probe his teeth and gums.

'How old is the young boy?' Dr Zhao asked.

'Five. Last night he felt pain on the right side of his mouth and his cheek was swollen,' Na Na said.

'He's only five but has so many cavities, as an adult you should help him take better care of his teeth. This tooth on the right side won't grow a new one until he's ten. I need to give him a local anaesthesia injection to treat his teeth,' Dr Zhao said.

Na Yuan sat up on the chair. 'Will it hurt?'

Wei Zhexue gently patted Na Yuan's head. 'It doesn't hurt. I had the injection before, and Doctor Zhao even took out my teeth too. Doctor Zhao is a good dentist, you won't feel pain.'

Na Yuan looked pitifully at Na Na. 'Little aunt, can I not have an injection?'

'Little Yuan be good, after Doctor Zhao treats your teeth, it won't hurt anymore,' Na Na said sternly.

Dr Zhao prepared the injection. 'Little boy, hold onto your little friend firmly, don't let him move around.'

Wei Zhexue nodded his head and he held Na Yuan's arms firmly. Na Na helped to hold Na Yuan's head.

Dr Zhao injected the local anaesthesia (LA) and Na Yuan cried out.

Dr Zhao was used to hearing little children cry so he stayed calm whilst he treated Na Yuan's teeth.

Although Na Yuan cried nonstop, luckily he cooperated and kept his mouth wide open for Dr Zhao to treat his teeth.

Wei Zhexue used tissues to wipe tears off Na Yuan's face. 'Little Yuan, you're doing well, it's nearly over, later it won't hurt... little Yuan you're a boy, you need to be brave.'

Na Na's heart ached to death and she was grateful toward Wei Zhexue for comforting little Yuan. If Wei Zhexue wasn't with them, she'd be panicking to keep little Yuan still on her own.

Na Yuan gradually stopped crying.

'All done. For the rest of the day don't let him chew on his right side and take him back here next week for a check-up,' Dr Zhao said.

Na Na nodded her head. 'Thank you Doctor Zhao, I'll remember. Doctor Zhao print me a bill and I'll take it outside to pay at the reception desk.'

Dr Zhao laughed loudly. 'What do you need a bill for? We're all family here, no need to be courteous.'

Whilst Na Na was thinking of a tactful way to clear the misunderstanding about the relationship between Wei Zhexue and herself, Wei Zhexue carried Na Yuan in his arms. 'Uncle Zhao's right, Na Na you don't have to be courteous.'

Na Na followed Wei Zhexue's lead and she nodded her head. 'Ok. Thank you uncle Zhao.'

Wei Zhexue laughed at Na Na's reluctance and her face flushed red.

'Enough. Go somewhere else to be lovey dovey, I still have many patients left,' Dr Zhao said warmly.

Na Yuan who leaned his little head against Wei Zhexue's chest, waved his little hand. 'Thank you Mr Doctor, see you later.'

Wei Zhexue carried Na Yuan and they followed Na Na outside. Wei Zhexue saw Na Na's ears were pink and he choked on laughter.

Na Na was too embarrassed and she glared at him. 'Why didn't you explain to Doctor Zhao the truth?'

Wei Zhexue played innocent. 'I just wanted uncle Zhao to give Na Yuan the best treatment.'

Na Na couldn't refute Wei Zhexue's good intentions. 'Today I troubled you. I want to go back to the seventeenth floor-'

Wei Zhexue carried Na Yuan to the elevator. 'I'll escort both of you there.'

Na Na wanted to decline but she followed Wei Zhexue to the elevator.

At the elevator Na Na said thank you to Wei Zhexue. 'I'll take little Yuan upstairs. I've troubled you a lot already... thank you.'

Wei Zhexue gently put Na Yuan down onto the ground and he helped adjust Na Yuan's shirt collar. 'It's nothing. Later if you need anything, come and find me. Don't be courteous.'

Na Na held little Yuan's hand and they entered the elevator. 'If you need my help, you can come find me too.'

Na Yuan's teeth didn't hurt anymore and regained his good mood. He waved his little hand. 'Thank you uncle, see you later.'

By the time Na Na and Na Yuan arrived on the seventeenth floor it was midday and the patients were served their lunch meals.

Na Na took little Yuan to the front of the staff room and she told him to patiently wait inside the staff room for her to buy lunch from the hospital's cafeteria.

Na Yuan nodded his head and he obediently went inside the staff room to wait for Na Na. The moment he stepped inside, he saw a scary man who wore blue clothes weirdly. The scary man sat behind a table and stared at Na Yuan.

'Hello good uncle doctor,' Na Yuan said softly.

Shi Dan Ping came straight to the staff room from the operating room so he still wore his blue scrubs. He stared closely at the little boy's face. No matter how he looked at the little boy, he felt the little boy's face was familiar. He frowned. 'Who are your parents?'

Na Yuan was still scared so he answered honestly. 'My name is Na Yuan.'

Shi Dan Ping slowly swallowed the little boy's name. He felt his heart tightened. It was hard to swallow the little rabbit gave birth to another man's child, it made his heart ached.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't deny the little rabbit and the little boy's faces did resemble each other a little. He spoke calmly. 'You're Na Na's son? Why are you here? Where's Na Na and your dad?'

Na Yuan scrunched his face and he widened his eyes. 'Uncle, I'm not little aunt's son, she's my little aunt.'

Shi Dan Ping was able inhale air again. His heart rejoiced and he felt relieved because the little rabbit wasn't the little boy's mum.

Na Yuan stared curiously at the scary man in front of him who suddenly looked gentler and he wasn't scared of the man anymore. He daringly pointed at the man's head. 'Uncle, why are you wearing that?'

Shi Dan Ping took off his blue cap and he casually told a fake adventure. 'Uncle was fighting with an evil monster before, this is an important helmet to protect my head.'

The little dumpling Na Yuan scoffed and bravely scolded the big Shi Dan Ping mercilessly in a loud voice. 'Uncle is a liar! That thing is clearly what little aunt used as a rain boot, it's not a helmet to protect a head!'

Shi Dan Ping was speechless. He frowned and he felt his head ached... the little boy wasn't curious about why he was wearing a blue cap on his head – the little boy was clearly curious why he was wearing a blue 'rain boot' on his head!

Indeed the little rabbit and the little boy was steamed from a similar pot, they were experts at giving him trouble!

Whilst Shi Dan Ping and Na Yuan was having a staring match, Na Na returned to the staff room with lunch. 'Oh, Doctor Shi you've finished the surgery already? Have you eaten lunch?'

Shi Dan Ping glanced at Na Na who was carefully holding a tray with a mountain plate of food on it.

Shi Dan Ping felt it wasn't a waste of energy to be troubled by the little boy,

the little rabbit knew how to treat him lunch.

Shi Dan Ping's heart was overjoyed and he spoke in a rare gentle tone of voice. 'I haven't eaten, I just came out from the operating room.'

Na Na put the tray of food on a table, she helped Na Yuan sit in front of the table. Whilst she cut the food into small bite sizes for Na Yuan, she spoke carelessly. 'Oh, then you need to run quickly. The hospital cafeteria's lunch service is almost over and there's not much food left.'

Shi Dan Ping's rare gentle aura melted and solidified into his usual cold aura to the point he wanted to quickly disappear from the staff room. He spoke calmly. 'No need, I'm not going to die if I skip a lunch meal. So there's no reason for me to eat leftovers.'

End of Chapter Fifteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Sixteen

Chapter Sixteen

Na Yuan and Na Na stopped eating when they heard Shi Dan Ping insulted their lunch was leftovers. Na Yuan and Na Na lifted their heads at the same time and they stared at Shi Dan Ping's sadistic face.

Shi Dan Ping looked closely at the dumpling and little dumpling's round faces and their pitiful round watery eyes. Shi Dan Ping wanted to tease both dumplings until their round watery eyes were brimmed with tears.

Shi Dan Ping stared at the two dumplings for a while and he suspected his heart. Na Na was clearly an innocent and inexperienced twenty year old girl, it wasn't possible for her to be a mum of a little boy that big. So he suspected his heart clouded his logical mind, he should have realised immediately the little boy wasn't Na Na's son.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't solve the strange feeling in his heart. It was if something intruded into his heart, it slowly cleared his heart's thick fog. He suppressed that strange feeling by forcing his mind to think of evil things to say.

Little dumpling Na Yuan reluctantly stopped chewing and opened his mouth, because he wanted to defend his lunch. 'But this is a delicious lunch!'

Na Yuan's innocent protest melted Shi Dan Ping's evil thoughts and Shi Dan Ping regained his calmness.

Although the hospital cafeteria food wasn't gourmet food, but for the little dumpling Na Yuan who was a sworn enemy against boiled eggs, he felt the hospital cafeteria food was more delicious than the food his childcare centre served.

Shi Dan Ping could smell the appetizing fragrance of the food and he reflexively swallowed his saliva.

Shi Dan Ping purposely came straight to the staff room from the operating room without taking a shower and changing his clothes, because he didn't want to miss out on buying lunch when one of the cafeteria volunteers wheeled the

trolley of lunch meals to the staff room. But he was too late and if he was to order lunch from outside the hospital, by the time lunch was delivered he'd be back on duty.

Na Yuan dismissed Shi Dan Ping's insult and Na Yuan happily lifted an oily chicken leg to his mouth, but he noticed Shi Dan Ping's gaze was focused on the chicken leg. Na Yuan rubbed his lips for a while before he reluctantly decided to sacrifice the chicken leg. 'Uncle doctor, do you want to eat this? It's really delicious!'

Shi Dan Ping snapped out of his hunger and he scoffed. 'Uncle doesn't want to be like you, eating too much and become chubby.'

Na Na laughed at Shi Dan Ping's childishness.

Shi Dan Ping glared at Na Na and she was too scared to laugh.

Shi Dan Ping laughed an evil laugh. 'Chubby like your little aunt who is round like a balloon.'

Na Na frowned and she glared at Shi Dan Ping.

The pitiful little dumpling Na Yuan was provoked by Shi Dan Ping's cruel words. Na Yuan opened his eyes and mouth wide and in his state of shock he dropped the delicious chicken leg on the floor.

'Did you have a revelation little boy?' Shi Dan Ping asked sarcastically.

Na Yuan glanced at the chicken leg on the floor then he glanced at the scary man in front of him and finally he looked pitifully at Na Na. Na Yuan pouted his lips and he wanted Na Na to comfort him. 'Little aunt, uncle doctor is evil! The chicken leg fell on the floor.'

Na Na felt helpless, she didn't know who offended Dr Shi for him to vent on little Yuan and herself.

Na Na sighed. She was used to Shi Dan Ping teasing her and she usually ignored his teasing, but little Yuan was still young so he was easily provoked by Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na stood, she used a tissue to pick up the fallen chicken leg and she put the chicken leg into the rubbish bin. Then she sat back down and she selected

nutritious food to put on little Yuan's plate. She spoke in a gentle tone of voice. 'Be good and I'll buy you a bigger chicken leg for dinner. Uncle is a vegetarian so he can't eat meat. Let's save our appetite for dinner.'

Na Yuan understood clearly and he nodded his head. His little hand happily picked up his fork and he softly apologised. 'Amitabha... (a Buddhist chant called 'nianfo' in Chinese – to attain enlightenment, phonetically is namo-emitufo) uncle, I'm really sorry, I didn't know you're a monk.'

Na Na's face was swollen from laughing too much – why couldn't innocent little Yuan just eat his lunch peacefully?

Shi Dan Ping frowned and he gritted his teeth. 'Even if you cut off part of your bottom half to become my boss, uncle still won't willingly knock on a monastery's door.'

Shi Dan Ping's words were too deep for the little dumpling Na Yuan to understand. Na Yuan just followed his simple way of thinking to process the meaning of Shi Dan Ping's deep words. Na Yuan used his fork to pick up a piece of carrot and celery he hated eating and lifted his fork in the pitiful Shi Dan Ping's direction. 'Uncle monk, you're really pitiful. Uncle monk, you can eat this, it's not meat.'

Na Na didn't dare to look at Shi Dan Ping, she buried her head into her plate of food and she apologised softly. 'I'm really sorry, little Yuan doesn't understand the situation... Doctor Shi, one hundred thousand times don't take it to heart.'

Shi Dan Ping couldn't believe how daring the little boy was! The little boy shouldn't think Shi Dan Ping didn't notice the little boy avoided eating the carrots and celery Na Na cut up for the little boy.

Luckily Na Na apologised so Shi Dan Ping didn't want to quarrel with the little boy. Shi Dan Ping glanced coldly at Na Na, he stood and walked outside the staff room.

Na Na slowly exhaled and she waited until Shi Dan Ping was out of sight before she warned little Yuan. 'Remember, value your life and stay far away from Doctor Shi.'

Na Yuan crazily ate and nodded his little head at the same time. 'Yes, little

aunt. I like uncle Wei more than the scary uncle doctor. The scary uncle doctor is even scarier than Mr Zhao!’

Na Yuan’s main reason for liking uncle Wei more than the uncle doctor was because the uncle doctor dared to call him chubby! Na Yuan was insulted, he was clearly a loveable young boy!

Na Na rubbed little Yuan’s head then she used a tissue to wipe his little hands. Na Na whole-heartedly agreed with little Yuan – of course Dr Shi was scarier than Dr Zhao. Dr Zhao injected a small needle into little Yuan’s mouth... but Dr Shi cut opened patients’ brains.

End of Chapter Sixteen

Related

Seventeen

Chapter Seventeen

Na Na took little Yuan to a stationary shop near the hospital. They browsed through the shop and Na Na chose many books, pencils and crayons for little Yuan.

Little dumpling Na Yuan's teeth were pain free, he didn't need to go to childcare and he got to spend time with his little aunt. He felt incredibly excited, he flew around the shop, pointed out all the items he liked and he laughed happily.

Na Na chased little Yuan around the shop, because she was worried he'd fall or bump into another person.

After running around the shop for a while, Na Yuan felt hot and he took off his little jacket. His head was sweaty, his soft black hair stuck to his forehead and his face was flushed red. He looked like an adorable and happy child just like his little friends.

Na Na couldn't help remember how little Yuan used to always be an energetic, happy and carefree child who loved to sit and laugh on his dad's shoulders. But she felt like after the night of the accident, little Yuan had matured too quickly at such a young age and her heart ached for little Yuan.

Na Yuan pressed his little palms against a glass cabinet, which displayed a variety of sweet lollies inside. He heard his little aunt called his name, swallowed his saliva, he turned around to face his little aunt and his round and excited eyes silently pleaded.

When Na Na saw little Yuan's eyes lit up, she momentarily forgot about her guilt and the heart ache she felt for failing to take better care of little Yuan. She laughed and she spoke warmly. 'Little Yuan, did you forget about your teeth cavities? You can't eat lollies.'

Na Yuan's mouth quivered. 'But little aunt... my teeth doesn't hurt anymore. Can't I eat some lollies?'

Na Na rubbed little Yuan's sweaty head. She didn't know when was her next day off from work to be able to spend time with little Yuan. She opened the glass cabinet door of the lolly display and she chose two lollipops. Then she squatted in front of little Yuan and she spoke sternly. 'Little Yuan, promise me you'll wait until your teeth doesn't hurt anymore before you eat a lollipop. Otherwise your teeth will hurt again for a longer time.'

Na Yuan stared at the two lollipops in his little aunt's hand like a lion cub eyeing a chickling. He nodded his head as a promise. 'Yes, little aunt.'

Na Na paid for little Yuan's books, pencils, crayons and lollipops at the counter. Afterward she gave little Yuan the lollipops to hold.

Little Yuan put his precious lollipop treasures in his little pants pockets. 'Little aunt, I'm not scared if my teeth hurts again because it means you'll spend time with me.'

Na Na's eyes stung. She hugged little Yuan and she kissed his soft chubby cheek. But her heart was overflowed with pain.

Na Na took little Yuan to the supermarkets to buy groceries for little Yuan and Mrs Chen. Then she took little Yuan to a restaurant to eat dinner and they took the bus back to Mrs Chen's house.

Little Yuan slept on Na Na's chest on the bus and his little hands clutched her arm in his sleep, because he was subconsciously scared she'd leave him whilst he slept.

Na Na carried the sleeping little Yuan and a bag of groceries and stationary off the bus and upstairs to Mrs Chen's house. Na Na put the bag on the kitchen bench then she carried little Yuan to a guest room. She gently put little Yuan on the bed, she took off his shoes, covered his little body with a bedsheet and she kissed his cheek.

Na Na walked outside into the kitchen and she unpacked the groceries into the fridge and she stacked the stationary neatly on the coffee table in the living room.

Mrs Chen poured a glass of water for Na Na. 'Little girl, you must be tired, sit down and take a rest.'

Na Na accepted the glass of water and she sat on a chair. She drank the glass of water and she recounted hers and little Yuan's day. She asked Mrs Chen to remind little Yuan to brush his teeth. She glanced at the clock on the wall then she said goodbye to Mrs Chen and she rushed to the bus stop for the last bus to the city hospital.

There weren't many passengers on the bus to the city hospital. She sat on the bus next to an opened window and cool breezes passed through her pained heart.

Na Na stared at the streetlights outside the window and she reminisced about her childhood. When Na Na was born, her older brother Na Hao was ten years old. Na Hao idolised their dad who was tall and gentle so Na Hao mimicked their dad's behaviour. The young ten year old Na Hao like their dad, loved and protected the baby Na Na.

When Na Na was born their dad started a new job and was often away on a business trip for two or three days a week. Their mum was promoted to a head nurse position so their mum was rarely home with baby Na Na and Na Hao.

Na Hao shouldered the responsibility of looking after baby Na Na and he carried her everywhere with him if neither of their parents were home.

The neighbourhood boys Na Hao's age ridiculed Na Hao for carrying around a little baby. But Na Hao ignored them, he was proud of his baby sister, he loved doting and playing with baby Na Na.

The ten year old Na Hao was supposed to enjoy spending time playing with his friends at his age, he shouldn't have to be mature and focus his energy looking after his little sister.

Na Na's first words were 'big brother Hao' and it deeply moved Na Hao... Na Na felt it was Na Hao who raised her more than their parents.

Na Na's parents told the little Na Na all about her outings with Na Hao when Na Na was still a baby. Since little Na Na could talk and walk, her parents' work was stable and they got to spend more time with little Na Na and Na Hao. But Na Hao by then was like an old wise man on the inside, matured beyond his years and he continued to help give little Na Na a carefree childhood.

But Na Hao's only child, little Yuan needed Na Na to take care of little Yuan yet she felt like she disappointed Na Hao because she wasn't able to take care of little Yuan properly on her own.

The more immersed Na Na was in her feelings, the more she thought about resigning her job. But she worked at one of the best hospitals, had health benefits for herself and little Yuan and she wanted to be a permanent nurse in the neurology department so she didn't want to resign.

Na Na walked dejectedly off the bus and back home. When Na Na entered inside hers and Mao Dan's home, Mao Dan was watching a movie on the computer in Mao Dan's room.

Na Na sat on the bottom mattress of Mao Dan's bunk bed. Like Na Na, Mao Dan used the bottom mattress as a bed and the top mattress was used as storage for miscellaneous clothes and clutter.

'Can I ask you something?' Na Na asked.

Mao Dan's eyes were glued to the computer. 'What is it?'

'I... can I bring a little child to live here with us for a short period?' Na Na asked.

Mao Dan immediately turned away from the computer and she looked curiously at her friend. 'Don't tell me, you didn't protect yourself and have a love child?'

'What are you thinking? I'm talking about my older brother's son, he's five years old, his parents... uh, there's no one home to take care of him so I wanted him to live here with me. Little Yuan is very good and obedient. He isn't noisy and he won't bother you-' Na Na said.

Mao Dan sighed, she was disappointed. 'I thought you had something juicy to tell me... it's nothing, another little child to liven up this dreary place is a good thing. But there's all sorts of sordid people in our building, make sure you tell your nephew not to go outside if neither of us are home to supervise him.'

Na Na was incredibly grateful. 'You're a really good person! Don't worry, I'll explain to little Yuan about what he should do if he's home alone. I won't cause you trouble... ah, I forgot, firstly I need to enrol him to a childcare near here. The

childcare he goes to is too far from here and it's not possible for me to drop and pick him up at a childcare that's too far.'

'It's no trouble, you don't need to be courteous. Don't worry too much about finding a childcare, there's one in the hospital. Just ask your co-workers who have young children who go to the hospital's childcare and you'll be reassured it's a good and convenient childcare for your nephew,' Mao Dan said.

Na Na knew the hospital's childcare was good, because many of her co-workers sent their young children there and they told her their children loved going to childcare... but the yearly enrolment fees could choke her to death!

Na Na just nodded her head and her heart was full of worries.

The sooner Na Na enrolled little Yuan at a nearby childcare, the sooner she can bring little Yuan to live with her and she'd be less worried.

The following morning, Na Na returned to work. It was another busy day, Na Na ran around to help and monitor many patients to the point she felt dizzy.

Shi Dan Ping finished a surgery and he returned to the seventeenth floor. At that time Na Na just finished a work shift and she sat on a chair in the staff room to rest.

Liu Nan had persuaded Shi Dan Ping to let her put disinfectant on his chin and he reluctantly agreed. But she purposely rubbed a thick layer of disinfectant on his chin so it was hard to wash off and outlined the teeth marks on his chin clearer.

If most of the staff members weren't scared of Dr Shi's infamous mouth for spewing cruel words, Dr Shi would have been surrounded by a crowd of staff members who wanted a close up view of the teeth marks on his chin.

Shi Dan Ping didn't need to look at the curious faces around him to know what they were curious about. He put his hands in his pants pocket and he walked calmly to the staff room. He passed by many young nurses who had the same regret... they regretted they weren't the one who bit his chin.

At least there was one young nurse who wasn't entranced by Dr Shi... Na Na. The moment Na Na saw Dr Shi walked into the staff room in a crisp white shirt and long pants, she immediately felt her teeth hurt a little at the sight of the

disinfectant on his chin which made her teeth marks clearer.

Shi Dan Ping glanced at Na Na and he walked passed her to a table that had a drawer of bandages, band aids, scissors, a hand mirror and disinfectants. He took out a hand mirror and a tube of disinfectant. He held the mirror and he rubbed the ivory disinfectant cream on his chin.

Na Na stared at Shi Dan Ping's chin and her tongue was numb. She glanced around the staff room and everyone was staring at Shi Dan Ping's chin too. She knew his co-workers would notice the teeth marks but she didn't know they'd be so curious about it... he was indeed the hospital's darling jewel and handsome flower. She felt in comparison to his handsome flower face, her face was like chickens' feet.

End of Chapter Seventeen

Related

part 1

Chapter Eighteen (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping rubbed the ivory cream on his chin and he assessed Na Na's reaction in the mirror at the same time. 'What is it? You have something to say?'

Na Na shook her head and she smiled awkwardly. 'No, no. I just saw your wound and I felt bad-'

'Your smile is unsightly,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na's smile became stiffer.

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. 'Like an ox monster.'

Na Na gritted her teeth and she waved a fisted hand at Shi Dan Ping's back.

Na Na ate her lunch and she took a nap on a bed before her next work shift started.

Na Na didn't get to sleep too deeply when she heard a loud crash sound. She was startled awake, she adjusted her nurse uniform and she rushed outside to see what happened.

Outside the staff resting room, Na Na saw a few people surrounded a pale young man who leaned against a stretcher and he didn't have the strength to stand on his own.

'What happened? Why isn't the patient taken to emergency?' Na Na asked.

One of the young man's family members next to the young man explained the situation 'We did take him to emergency and they brought us here and told us to wait for someone to allocate a bed for him on this floor.'

The supervising doctor who was rostered to be on duty whilst the emergency supervisor took an afternoon break that day was Luo Xing Tao.

Na Na checked the computer for a spare bed on the seventeenth floor, she found one and allocated it to the young man. She helped the young man onto the spare bed, measured his blood pressure and body temperature.

Shi Dan Ping heard the crash from outside his office. He walked outside his office and he saw Na Na was monitoring a patient he didn't recognise. 'What happened?'

'A new patient was admitted here by emergency,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping knew Luo Xing Tao was on supervising duty in the emergency department during the afternoon break. Shi Dan Ping and Luo Xing Tao were like water and fire. Since Luo Xing Tao admitted a patient here, Shi Dan Ping didn't question Luo Xing Tao's decision to avoid an unnecessary confrontation.

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he walked back to his office to continue reviewing a patient's minor surgery scheduled at two in the afternoon.

Although Na Na was supposed to be on an afternoon break, the nurses on duty called in to say they were delayed and they asked Na Na to help them. Na Na was tired but she couldn't say no to them.

Most of the nurses were married with families and most of the single nurses lived far from the hospital. So if nurses had an urgent matter they didn't hesitate to ask Na Na to work an extra shift for them.

Shi Dan Ping was only scheduled to perform the minor surgery at two in the afternoon. He finished the minor surgery earlier than planned so he and his co-workers went to a restaurant nearby to have an early dinner.

Shi Dan Ping returned to the hospital after the dinner. But when he arrived on the seventeenth floor he heard a commotion and he also heard the little rabbit calming the crowd.

Shi Dan Ping frowned and he walked faster in the direction of Na Na's voice. A crowd obstructed his way. 'Move away!'

Shi Dan Ping didn't hesitate to push aside the crowd. He saw Na Na hunched over the new patient's bed and her pink nurse uniform was stained with blood, she looked worried and there was also panic in her eyes.

'Doctor, save him. Hurry, save him. He's unconscious-' one of the young man's family members pleaded.

Shi Dan Ping held his hand up. 'Don't panic. Firstly, I want everyone to go

outside. Rest assured, I'll do my best to save him.'

The young man's family wiped the tears off their faces and they helped to clear the crowd away from the young man's bed.

'What happened?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'I don't know... suddenly he was unconscious and his eyes didn't stop bleeding. I called Doctor Luo and he said he'll be here later. But I'm scared the patient will-' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping put on gloves and took out a medical penlight from his shirt pocket. He opened the patient's eyes and he assessed the patient's condition. 'Don't panic. Before the patient was unconscious did he take any medication or did he tell anyone he was feeling pain anywhere?'

Shi Dan Ping's calm voice helped Na Na to compose herself. 'Since the patient was admitted here in the afternoon, Doctor Luo didn't give any instructions relating to the patient. Doctor Luo just wrote on the patient's hospital record that the patient's eyes were blurry and the patient felt dizzy. His blood pressure was a little elevated but his body temperature was normal.'

'Did the patient have a CT scan?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na shook her head. 'I asked his family and they said he was scheduled for a CT scan tomorrow-'

'Call someone and tell them to immediately come here and take the patient for a CT scan,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na quickly went to the phone as Doctor Shi requested.

After Na Na hung up the phone, she felt relieved. She'd panicked when the new patient was unconscious, because all the doctors and nurses on the seventeenth floor haven't returned from their afternoon break. She was still an inexperienced nurse, all she could do was call Dr Luo and monitor the patient's condition until Dr Luo arrived. If Shi Dan Ping didn't unexpectedly showed up, she didn't know what would have happened to the patient.

After the patient's CT scans were taken, the patient was wheeled to emergency by emergency staff and Shi Dan Ping followed them. Suddenly Shi

Dan Ping stopped walking, he turned around and spoke to Na Na. 'The patient is under our care now. You should go take a shower and eat dinner. Then come back here and wait for Doctor Luo.'

Na Na nodded her head and Shi Dan Ping quickly caught up to the emergency staff and the patient.

Na Na finally noticed on her nurse uniform was a lot of blood and Shi Dan Ping was right, she needed to take a shower.

End of Chapter Eighteen (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Eighteen (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na heard the elevator opened on the seventeenth floor of the hospital, it was a slightly tipsy Dr Luo who walked outside the elevator. 'Where's the patient?'

Na Na exploded on the inside. The patient nearly could have died, but the reason Dr Luo was delayed was because he went out for drinks! What an irresponsible old man!

'Is this how a supervising doctor overseeing patients supposed to behave? Or is it, Doctor Luo, you have a habit of forgetting your duties?' Na Na said sarcastically.

Luo Xing Tao had a few glasses of wine, he was still tipsy so he was slow to notice Na Na was mocking him. 'Ah, it must be that patient. The one with blurry vision. It appeared there's a complication in his brain affecting his vision that's why I sent him here... firstly, take me to see him and I'll assess his condition.'

'Doctor Luo, you came a step too late-' Na Na said.

'What? He died?' Luo Xing Tao asked.

'No, the patient was taken to emergency. Doctor Shi and the-' Na Na said.

Luo Xing Tao exhaled gently, he was relieved the patient wasn't dead. But after he heard the patient was under Dr Shi's care, his guard was up. 'Indeed Doctor Shi has a lot of free time, because of someone else's patient he was willing to work overtime-'

'Doctor-Luo! Where were you when the patient was unconscious? I called you and you took a long time to come see the patient. If it wasn't for Doctor Shi, the patient would have bled to death waiting for you!' Na Na scolded.

It was a long time since someone provoked Luo Xing Tao, let alone a new little nurse who didn't know her place. 'What did you say?'

'Did you understand what I said? Or it is, Doctor Luo, you drank too much and

you can't understand a human language?' Na Na asked sarcastically.

Luo Xing Tao couldn't believe the nerve of the simpleton in front of him. That simpleton! How dare she talk down to him? Or could it be she was spending too much time with Shi Dan Ping and she was infected by Shi Dan Ping's poisonous mouth?

After Na Na's angry outburst, she glared fiercely at the irresponsible lion who stood in front of her. She scoffed, turned around and she walked away from him.

'Hey! Stop!' Luo Xing Tao ordered.

Na Na thought the lion wanted another scolding, she turned around and she spoke loudly 'What for?'

Luo Xing Tao was shocked to the point he nearly stumbled onto the floor. He laughed awkwardly and he brushed his nose. Most of the effect of the alcohol he drank was worn off. 'I'm sorry, can you tell me which operating room the patient was taken to? I have a good understanding of the patient's medical history and I can help with the patient's surgery.'

Na Na's outburst melted her anger and replaced her anger with embarrassment, she wasn't in the mood to scold anyone anymore. She spoke softly. 'The operating room number thirteen.'

After a while the nurses who were delayed arrived on the seventeenth floor. But Na Na didn't rest immediately, because she was still worried about the patient. Instead Na Na went to the operating room number thirteen. Unexpectedly, the moment she arrived there she saw Shi Dan Ping came out of the operating room.

Shi Dan Ping rubbed his temples. 'Why aren't you resting?'

'How's the patient? Why is it just you coming outside from the operating room?' Na Na asked.

'The patients' doctors are all inside, what's the point of me staying? Don't worry, the patient's life isn't at risk. If the patient wakes up tomorrow, the patient's doctor can assess if the patient's condition is stable,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na frowned. 'Didn't you see the drunk state Doctor Luo was in? How can

you stand by and let him perform the surgery-'

'What else can I do? The patient wasn't assigned to me,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'You-' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping just showered and he wasn't wearing his glasses. Na Na didn't understand the situation, but the complex look in his eyes made her swallow her scolding words into her stomach.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. 'Go rest.'

Na Na stared at the back of Shi Dan Ping's spotless blue shirt and his long legs that walked outside the hospital. Although he clearly walked calmly, she felt he hid a bit of loneliness.

Outside the hospital, Shi Dan Ping felt angry the little rabbit scolded him for being cold hearted. Even in a clean place like a hospital, there were hidden dust, which was why saving patients' lives wasn't straight forward. There were protocols, precedents and unspoken rules to follow... most of the hospital's hidden dust were the buried private agendas in the hearts of the people responsible for saving patients' lives. Why didn't the little rabbit understand he only had one pair of hands? He was human too, he couldn't be responsible for too many patients' lives in his hands.

End of Chapter Eighteen (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Nineteen

Chapter Nineteen

Na Na returned home drenched from the rain, she was alone because Mao Dan was at work. Na Na didn't have an appetite to eat or drink, she rolled up her shirt sleeves and she walked straight to the bathroom and scrubbed the toilet.

Although Na Na and Mao Dan's home was cramp, Na Na wanted it to be clean for little Yuan so he wouldn't get sick. After she scrubbed the toilet, she did the laundry, swept the kitchen and living room floor. Then she went into the bedroom, she tapped the bunk bed with a mop handle and mice scattered out from under the bottom bunk bed. After the mice disappeared through a hole in the wall, she mopped the bedroom floor and cried at the same time. She couldn't believe hers and Mao Dan's home was considered safe for humans to live.

Na Na was frugal with her wages, she saved money to buy the best things for little Yuan but she couldn't provide for little Yuan better accommodation near her workplace. She cried louder and she called out her older brother's name. Na Hao gave her a carefree childhood but she failed to give Na Hao's only child the same carefree childhood. 'Big brother, come back! Little Yuan needs your shoulders. I need your shoulders to cry on. I can't endure anymore.'

Na Na didn't know how long she sat on the bedroom floor and cried. Her swollen round eyes couldn't cry anymore and she sunk in dark despair as dark as the rainy night sky outside the bedroom window.

A while later Na Na slowly stood, she brushed dust off her pants and she regained her determination. She was determined to find a way to rent a suitable home nearby fit for little Yuan and herself to live.

The following morning, Na Na woke up to a hot and sunny morning. The sunlight lifted her spirits.

Na Na washed and changed her clothes. She arrived at the hospital staff room at seven-forty in the morning, and a staff member reported to Zhang Wei Dong about the Luo Xing Tao's patient who was unconscious yesterday. Luo Xing Tao

sat anxiously on a chair and he watched Zhang Wei Dong's reaction carefully.

Luo Xing Tao was anxious because he knew he behaved irresponsibly and put his patient's life at risk. If his patient had died, he couldn't tell the patient's family it was out of his control and he did everything reasonable to try to save the patient.

Luo Xing Tao secretly glanced at Shi Dan Ping to gauge whether Shi Dan Ping would use a golden opportunity to undermine Luo Xing Tao's position at the hospital.

After the medical staff morning briefing, Zhang Wei Dong was his usual jolly self. But when Zhang Wei Dong looked in Luo Xing Tao's direction, Zhang Wei Dong's eyes looked disapprovingly and angry at Luo Xing Tao. Zhang Wei Dong's icy glare pierced straight through Luo Xing Tao's heart.

'Who is bed forty-seven patient's doctor?' Zhang Wei Dong asked sternly.

Luo Xing Tao swallowed his saliva and he spoke weakly. 'My patient-'

Zhang Wei Dong thumped the table and everyone in the room was startled to death.

'You're supposed to be a senior doctor! How can you admit the patient without properly examining him and thoroughly obtaining his medical history?' Zhang Wei Dong asked loudly.

'The patient was felt dizzy, his eyes were blurry but his reactions were normal... I thought there was a minor brain complication which temporarily affected his vision so I admitted him to the-'

Luo Xing Tao explained in a panicked voice.

Zhang Wei Dong laughed coldly. He pointed his index finger at Na Na who stood quietly in a corner. 'Little Na, go ahead and tell him that his patient's blood pressure was abnormally high!'

Na Na nodded her head. She honestly reported what happened yesterday, how after she measured the patient's blood pressure and body temperature she called Dr Luo and informed him the patient's blood pressure was abnormally high. Then she spoke up for Dr Luo's defence. 'At the time I called Dr Luo, he was busy treating patients in emergency-'

Zhang Wei Dong lifted his hand in the air. 'Little Na, you don't have to defend him.' He looked straight at Luo Xing Tao's eyes and he spoke each word loudly and clearly. 'It's clear the patient's body condition was abnormal but you chose to be blind to it! I understand the ICU department funds have been cut significantly compared to the past. But carelessly admitting a patient to another department from emergency put the patient's life at risk. What would have happened if the patient died? Who would be responsible if the patient had died? Would you have taken the responsibility?'

Luo Xing Tao's face flushed red from shame but he didn't dare dispute what Zhang Wei Dong said, because he knew it was his own fault for being irresponsible.

Zhang Wei Dong scolded Luo Xing Tao to the point Zhang Wei Dong's voice felt hoarse. Zhang Wei Dong accepted the cup of tea Na Na poured for him and he exhaled softly.

Luo Xing Tao bowed his head and he apologised softly. 'I'm really sorry Doctor Zhang. I-'

'Don't apologise to me. You should go and apologise to the patient. The patient has diabetes. His two eyes were bleeding, he's conscious but he's blind in one eye!' Zhang Wei Dong said loudly.

Luo Xing Tao stood, kept his head bowed and he slowly left the staff room and he went to apologise and check up on bed forty-seven patient.

Shi Dan Ping sat calmly in the staff room throughout the whole time Zhang Wei Dong was scolding Luo Xing Tao. Shi Dan Ping didn't like seeing medical staff making careless mistakes and seeing them disciplined harshly in front of co-workers.

Zhang Wei Dong also left the staff room to start his morning duties and all the other staff members followed his lead.

Na Na updated hospital records for patients on the seventeenth floor.

Shi Dan Ping passed Na Na a patient's hospital record and he noticed her eyes were swollen. 'Did someone hit you last night? Your eye bags don't need makeup, it's already colourful without makeup.'

Na Na wasn't in the mood to argue with Shi Dan Ping. She accepted the patient's hospital record from him and she dejectedly walked passed him.

Na Na felt partly responsible for the patient being blind in one eye. If she had asked more about the patient's medical history and if she insisted Dr Luo immediately check up on the patient then Dr Luo would have detected the root cause of the patient's symptoms and the patient wouldn't be blind in one eye.

Na Na was immersed in her guilt so she wasn't paying attention to where she was walking and she bumped into Wei Zhexue, who came to the seventeenth floor to see her.

Na Na was surprised and scared to see Wei Zhexue. She laughed awkwardly. 'Are you here for an unannounced check up on medical staff or you came here to see me?'

'Take a guess,' Wei Zhexue joked.

Na Na relaxed and she laughed comfortably. 'I'm guessing you came here to see me.'

Wei Zhexue laughed and rubbed Na Na's head. He was about to say something but he felt someone's intense cold glare was aimed at him.

Wei Zhexue lifted his head and he looked over Na Na's shoulder. He saw a young doctor stood behind Na Na at a distance. The young doctor wore glasses and the source of the intense cold glare he felt was from the young doctor, who was charging toward him and Na Na.

End of Chapter Nineteen

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty (Part 1)

‘Long time no see, little Ping,’ Wei Zhexue greeted warmly.

Na Na had never seen Shi Dan Ping’s eyes looked so scary, she inched closer to Wei Zhexue.

Shi Dan Ping noticed the little rabbit hopped toward Wei Zhexue, and he was angry the little rabbit liked Wei Zhexue more than him.

‘Wei Zhexue, during work hours please call me Doctor Shi,’ Shi Dan Ping said coldly.

Wei Zhexue wasn’t affected by Shi Dan Ping’s coldness. ‘Little Ping, no need to be too formal. You’re no fun.’

‘Compared to you who’s responsible for the administrative side of the hospital, I’m just a small employee on a small salary. But if I make a mistake it affects a person’s life. Unlike you, I don’t dare to be carefree at work,’ Shi Dan Ping said sarcastically.

Wei Zhexue tensed. ‘Doctor Shi, your reputation precedes you. You’re indeed a responsible doctor.’

‘I don’t dare to accept your praise. After eating breakfast, I’m worried for the rest of the day. I can’t be compared to your good heart,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Wei Zhexue didn’t dare to further provoke Shi Dan Ping’s poisonous mouth. Wei Zhexue turned to Na Na and he smiled warmly. He passed her a small package. ‘I got this from uncle Zhao. Inside are pain relief suitable for young children. I used the same pain relief when my teeth had cavities as a child too. Keep in case little Yuan needs it.’

Na Na was grateful and she accepted the package. ‘I’ve troubled you... how much is it? I’ll repay you.’

Wei Zhexue laughed. He gently knocked Na Na’s head. ‘One hundred thousand times don’t be courteous. Even uncle Zhao said we’re all one family, we don’t

need to be courteous with each other.'

Na Na remembered how Dr Zhao misunderstood hers and Wei Zhexue's relationship. Her cheeks blushed pink and she laughed awkwardly. 'You're teasing me-'

'Ahem,' Shi Dan Ping coughed coldly. He couldn't stand the little rabbit all shy in front of Wei Zhexue. 'Is there anything else? If not, Na Na and I need to start work together.'

Na Na realised the three of them were the focus of other people on the seventeenth floor and she was worried a new rumour would be spread about them.

Na Na pulled Wei Zhexue's shirt sleeve. 'I'll escort you to the elevator.'

Wei Zhexue excitedly nodded his head. But he couldn't say anything before Shi Dan Ping refused. 'You can't. We can't keep delaying time, we need to immediately leave together to examine patients.'

Na Na widened her eyes in disbelief and she asked suspiciously. 'Together? If you need to go examine the patients, why do you need me to come with you?'

Shi Dan Ping glared at the little rabbit and he quickly said nonsense to persuade her. 'There's a lot of patients I need to examine today. You're not too busy today, you can come with me to help me examine the patients.'

Na Na blinked a few times, she glanced at Shi Dan Ping then she glanced at Wei Zhexue. She didn't know what was the right thing to do.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit's reluctance to follow him and his eyes wilted. He felt his self-worth plummet. His calm heart was disturbed and to comfort his heart he impulsively lied. 'Doctor Zhang agreed.'

Na Na regarded Zhang Wei Dong highly and she was grateful Zhang Wei Dong had been taking good care of her at work. She immediately nodded her head and she agreed to follow Shi Dan Ping.

Wei Zhexue forced a laugh to reassure Na Na. 'It's nothing, you go ahead. Work is more important. When you're free, let's eat a meal together and bring little Yuan too. It'll make little Yuan happy.'

Na Na heard little Yuan's name and it prompted her to remember it was a good opportunity to ask Wei Zhexue if he knew affordable accommodation suitable for her and little Yuan to live together.

Na Na's eyes lit up. But Shi Dan Ping lost his patience long ago, he grabbed Na Na's arm and he dragged her away from Wei Zhexue.

Na Na couldn't loosen Shi Dan Ping's grip. She could only use her free hand to wave bye to Wei Zhexue and she asked Wei Zhexue in a loud voice. 'I'll come find you later. I have something I want to ask you to inquire for me.'

Wei Zhexue wasn't impressed with Shi Dan Ping's impatience. Wei Zhexue waved bye to Na Na who was already dragged by Shi Dan Ping far away. 'Go ahead. I'll wait for you.'

End of Chapter Twenty (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty (Part 2 of 2)

It was unusual for neurosurgeons to request a nurse to come with them to examine neuro patients with rare brain diseases, which was why Na Na was excited and curious about how she could assist Shi Dan Ping's work. 'Doctor Shi, what will my duties be?'

Shi Dan Ping snapped out of his miserable state and regained his composure. 'When you get there, you'll know. Whatever instructions I give you, you just need to follow them. You don't need to ask too many questions.'

Na Na knew Shi Dan Ping was in a bad mood, she closed her mouth and she felt like a maid who followed behind her master.

Na Na followed Shi Dan Ping outside and they took the garden detour to quickly get to the hospital's recently renovated patients' rooms.

On the garden path, the possessed Shi Dan Ping suddenly opened his mouth. 'Is he the good man who is gentle and caring that you like?'

'Huh? Who?' Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping awkwardly brushed his hair. 'Who else can it be? Who else do you know? Wei Zhexue!'

Na Na didn't understand why Shi Dan Ping suddenly asked her if she liked Wei Zhexue. She felt Wei Zhexue was a good man, who was gentle and caring. Wei Zhexue's laugh was always warm and gentle as a spring's breeze. Wei Zhexue was friendly and kind, she felt comfortable and relaxed around him. But she wasn't clear about what Shi Dan Ping meant by 'like' so she hesitated to reply.

But Shi Dan Ping felt the little rabbit's hesitation to answer him honestly was an eye sore! The little rabbit was shy and she lowered her head, and he felt fear crept inside his heart.

That strange feeling in his heart resurfaced and it pressed down against his heart, it made his heart ached. The strange feeling brought along an unknown kind of fear to accompany it. It was as if the little rabbit was a bitter cup of black

coffee, he feared the bitter taste but he couldn't let go of the little sweetness in the coffee. He didn't want to swallow or vomit the bitter sweet strange feeling.

Na Na lowered her head because she was confused how to reply to Shi Dan Ping since she didn't understand his question. So she didn't notice the man next to her was in a state of jealousy the same way the man next to her didn't realise he was jealous.

'Ah, Wei Zhexue has a good heart and very gentle. I've only met him two or three times. He sincerely helped me to take little Yuan to see a dentist... I'm grateful toward him and awkward too. Because clearly I'm not a close relative or know him that well, and I've been troubling him.'

Shi Dan Ping immediately smiled like a spring flower bud that bloomed. The coldness and insecurity he felt melted into happiness.

Shi Dan Ping was relieved the little rabbit just bumped into Wei Zhexue a couple of times because they worked in the same hospital. Shi Dan Ping was worried for nothing. Inside the little rabbit's heart, Wei Zhexue was just someone she felt grateful toward.

Shi Dan Ping's heart laughed and mocked Wei Zhexue, who dared to consider the little rabbit as one family with Wei Zhexue.

Na Na sighed and she mumbled to herself. 'Next month when I receive my wages, I should treat Wei Zhexue a meal and thank him in one go.'

Shi Dan Ping heard the little rabbit's mumble and he snapped out of his silent mockery of Wei Zhexue. He frowned and he spoke coldly. 'What else do you need help with that you wanted to ask him?'

Na Na was shocked. She stared confusedly at Shi Dan Ping, she was shocked he actually cared about her!

Shi Dan Ping saw the way the little rabbit was staring at him and he felt shy. His shyness turned into anger. 'Hurry up and tell me what's the problem.'

Na Na exhaled gently, she was relieved Shi Dan Ping was his usual abrupt self.

Na Na confided her priority concern. 'I wanted to ask what conditions needed to be met to enrol little Yuan at the hospital's childcare. Or even if I can send

little Yuan to childcare half a day. I don't know if I can afford the expensive enrolment fees. What if the preschool at the childcare doesn't let young children enrol half-way through a year? What's going to happen to little Yuan?'

Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit's concern was trivial. His little sister Shi Dan An used to be the primary doctor for the hospital's childcare but later he didn't know why she transferred to a different department. But Shi Dan An was also familiar with the childcare's administrative procedures. He could just ask Shi Dan An for a favour.

'That's a trivial concern, you don't need to worry about it. Let me make a connection for you. All you need to do is bring the little boy here to go to preschool,' Shi Dan Ping said proudly.

Na Na's eyes widened joyfully. She beamed widely to the point her little dimple on her cheek was visible.

Shi Dan Ping noticed the little rabbit's lips were dry and a little cracked. His heart itched and he wanted to make the little rabbit's soft lips glossy and smooth like the rest of the little rabbit's body.

Na Na was immersed in gratefulness and joy. She bowed at a ninety degree angle so she didn't see the evil gleam in the eyes of the man next to her.

'Doctor Shi, I'm really thankful! I'm lucky you're here, if I didn't have you to help me... I don't know what would happen to me and little Yuan,' Na Na said.

The little rabbit was grateful to the point she was in tears, it gave his heart an incredible sweet feeling.

'It's nothing. It's a trivial matter. Later if you run into any trouble, remember to come find me. Don't be shameless and trouble someone else,' Shi Dan Ping said calmly.

If it concerned the little rabbit, Shi Dan Ping didn't see himself as an outsider. On the inside he applauded himself for slowly entrapping the little rabbit into the palm of his hand.

Related

Twenty-One

Chapter Twenty-One

Na Na followed Shi Dan Ping to the hospital's neurology clinic. The moment they arrived at the clinic, even though the computers weren't turned on, there were several patients who waited outside the clinic earlier than their scheduled appointments with the neurosurgeon Dr Shi.

Whilst Shi Dan Ping examined the patients, Na Na stopped the patients who were waiting in the reception area from barging into the examination room and she also held anxious patients' heads who were thrashing their heads to allow Shi Dan Ping examine them.

Compared to Na Na's usual duties assigned by a head nurse, the duties Shi Dan Ping instructed Na Na to do were light to the point she had a lot of free time to be in a dazed state, which included looking closely at Shi Dan Ping. She felt the way Shi Dan Ping's usual cold eyes behind his glasses were different when he was focused on examining patients, his intense concentration was alluring.

Na Na sneezed and it broke her daze. She sneezed because a young tall girl, who smelt like someone who was soaked in a strong perfume walked into the examination room.

Shi Dan Ping frowned at the young girl. 'Didn't I explain to you already, the psychology clinic is the second office on the third floor and psychological rehabilitation is on the fifth floor.'

The young girl had beautiful wavy hair, she wore a mini dress over long legs and heels. She wore thick makeup and her thickly lined eyes gazed excitedly at Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na scratched her chin, she felt the look in the young girl's eyes was identical to the look in Mao Dan's eyes when Mao Dan saw a new beautiful dress and Mao Dan didn't care if Mao Dan's body suited the dress or not, Mao Dan still wanted to try on the new beautiful dress.

The young girl sat on the chair in front of the desk and she lifted a leg and

crossed it over the other leg. She laughed a sensual laugh. 'Doctor Shi, you don't know how to spare a jade's feelings. I was certain you'll come examine patients here at this time, and I know you understand this situation clearly.'

'Miss, you can't stop taking your medication. Your psychological illness is serious,' Shi Dan Ping said.

The young girl laughed because it wasn't the first time she was provoked by Shi Dan Ping. 'You're right, I have a serious psychological illness. But Doctor Shi, you're my only remedy.'

Na Na suppressed her urge to vomit.

Shi Dan Ping glanced at the little rabbit and his eyes warned the little rabbit not to vomit. 'Miss, a hospital isn't a place for joking around. I still have many patients so please leave and don't delay everyone's time.'

The young girl pressed her palms on the desk and she looked pitifully at Shi Dan Ping. 'That's right Doctor Shi, I'm your patient too. So you need to treat me with care.'

Na Na couldn't endure the young girl's innocent act anymore and Na Na laughed uncontrollably. Shi Dan Ping just stared coldly at the young girl.

Na Na felt the young girl was spoiled rotten and who was deluded about how the world was supposed to revolve around the young girl and everyone should grant the young girl's desires. Na Na felt the young girl was oblivious how the young girl's actions could repel others.

The young girl relied on beauty, she nibbled on her lips and fluttered her eyelashes to appear innocent and appealing. 'Doctor Shi, why don't you like me? Tell me and I'll fix it.'

'No, it isn't you. It's me, I have a fear of horrific sceneries,' Shi Dan Ping said.

The young girl tilted her head side to side in a confused state.

'I'm really sorry, I really can't stand the horrific scenery on your face. I just need to take a glance and it'll make me vomit my dinner from last night,' Shi Dan Ping said.

The young girl who was laughing seductively a moment ago turned into a

demoness, she slammed her hands onto the desk, she glared at Shi Dan Ping and she regretted she couldn't bite his head off.

Shi Dan Ping leaned back comfortably in his chair and he waited for the demoness to leave.

The young girl was incredibly angry and her chest heaved seductively in a way most men couldn't resist. But Shi Dan Ping was like a brick wall, he wasn't interested in the horrific scenery in front of him even if it included a heaving chest.

The young girl felt Shi Dan Ping's cruel words about her beautiful looks was more painful than a slap on the cheek. She was choked with anger that she couldn't speak and she ran off with the horrific scenery on her face.

Na Na's mouth was gaped open. She doubted Dr Shi's poisonous mouth had a limit.

Shi Dan Ping looked at the little rabbit and the little rabbit's body tensed. 'What's wrong?'

The little rabbit shook her head in denial. 'Ok, then call the next patient to come in.'

Na Na happily ran to the door and she called the next patient's name.

The rest of the morning Shi Dan Ping was busy examining patients. There were many patients scheduled for the day so he delayed lunch for an hour. But the patients scheduled for the afternoon arrived too early so he told the afternoon patients to come back at the appointed times.

Since Shi Dan Ping delayed lunch, it meant there wasn't a variety of lunch meals left at the hospital cafeteria so he took the little rabbit to eat at a restaurant nearby the hospital.

At the restaurant it was rare for Shi Dan Ping to be a considerate gentleman, he passed the menu to the little rabbit and he said she could order anything on the menu and it was his treat.

Na Na accepted the menu, she laughed happily and ordered her two favourite lunch dishes from the menu.

Shi Dan Ping pretended he wasn't paying attention, but he silently memorised the little rabbit's favourite lunch dishes.

Although it was a rare sight to see Shi Dan Ping civil toward someone, unfortunately when the lunch dishes were brought to Shi Dan Ping and Na Na's table, Na Na's phone called, it was Mrs Chen.

Na Na frowned anxiously. 'Hello, Mrs Chen?'

'Na Na, quickly come to my home. Little Yuan choked on a fish bone. He's crying for you,' Mrs Chen said in a panicked voice.

'Fish bone? Is it serious? Let little Yuan drink a little vinegar first. I'll be right there,' Na Na said hastily.

Na Na held her phone and she stood abruptly. Shi Dan Ping gripped her arm. 'Don't panic. I'll drive you there.'

Na Na nodded her head gratefully and she asked Mrs Chen to pass the phone to little Yuan. 'It didn't help? Ok, granny, can you pass the phone to little Yuan? I'll try to calm him down.'

Na Yuan cried whilst he spoke on the phone. 'Little aunt, my throat is really uncomfortable.'

'Don't cry,' Na Na said. Her heart ached to death whilst she sat in Shi Dan Ping's car on the way to Mrs Chen's home. 'Little Yuan is nearly a young man so don't cry easily. Tell me, why your throat is uncomfortable.'

'My face is very hot, throat hurts... little aunt, I miss you. I miss daddy too,' Na Yuan said and he cried loudly.

Na Na consoled little Yuan and she persuaded little Yuan to hang up the phone and wait patiently for her to get to Mrs Chen's house.

Shi Dan Ping rang Zhang Wei Dong and Shi Dan Ping explained the situation. Zhang Wei Dong told him to just take care of Na Na and her nephew and leave the afternoon patients for Zhang Wei Dong to examine.

Shi Dan Ping drove with one hand on the steering wheel and he passed tissues to the little rabbit with his other hand. 'Don't worry, it'll be ok.'

Na Na accepted the tissues from Shi Dan Ping and she hated herself for not

living with little Yuan earlier.

End of Chapter Twenty-One

Related

Twenty-Two

Chapter Twenty-Two

Shi Dan Ping parked the car in front of Mrs Chen's house and Na Na bolted outside the car and she ran upstairs.

Shi Dan Ping didn't turn off the car engine and he chased after the little rabbit.

Na Na opened Mrs Chen's front door and Na Na saw Mrs Chen was holding and patting little Yuan's back.

Na Yuan lifted his crying head from Mrs Chen's chest when he heard the door opened. His teary eyes saw his little aunt. 'Little aunt...'

Na Na rushed to Mrs Chen and Na Na lifted little Yuan into her chest. Na Na rested her forehead on little Yuan's forehead and she felt little Yuan's forehead was hot. 'What happened? Why do you have a fever?'

Mrs Chen lightly hit her sore back and she slowly stood. 'It's my fault for not taking proper care of little Yuan. I don't know why he's sick today... little Yuan doesn't want to eat anything so I made a nutritious fish broth for little Yuan. But I didn't pay enough attention while little Yuan was eating... and he choked on a fish bone.'

Na Na opened little Yuan's mouth, she couldn't see anything but a pink throat. Then she remembered Dr Shi followed her, she turned around and she asked Dr Shi to take a look. 'Doctor Shi, can you take a look at little Yuan's throat.'

Shi Dan Ping rolled up his sleeves, he tilted Na Yuan's head toward the light and he looked down Na Yuan's throat. 'Ah, he has a throat infection, it's a little swollen and I can't see the fish bone. We need to take him to the hospital and examine his throat using a laryngoscope.'

Na Yuan's little chubby hands clutched his little aunt's arm and his chubby bottom faced Shi Dan Ping. 'I don't need to go to the hospital... uncle doctor is bad.'

Na Na patted little Yuan's back and her eyes silently apologised to Shi Dan Ping for little Yuan's rudeness.

Shi Dan Ping lifted Na Yuan and draped Na Yuan over his shoulder. He ignored Na Yuan's chubby fisted hands that pounded his back. He calmly instructed the little rabbit to pack some of Na Yuan's belongings. 'Pack clothes and a few other things for the little boy and we'll go straight to the hospital.'

Na Na panicked when she saw little Yuan protested loudly and pounded Shi Dan Ping's back. Na Na snapped out of her panic state after Shi Dan Ping repeated the same instruction to her and she quickly went to pack some of little Yuan's belongings.

Shi Dan Ping held Na Yuan tightly over his shoulders downstairs. But Na Yuan thrashed about nonstop and nearly made him drop Na Yuan. He slapped Na Yuan's chubby bottom once to stop Na Yuan from moving.

'Uncle naughty! Your hand is bad! Your mouth is bad! Your whole body is bad! I don't need you to hold me. Little aunt save me!' Na Yuan cried out.

Na Yuan was angry and his little chubby face flushed pink. He cried loudly and he pounded his chubby fisted hands on the evil doctor's back.

'Your little aunt and granny are worried about you, but uncle doesn't have a soft heart. If you keep hitting uncle, I'll toss you onto the ground,' Shi Dan Ping threatened.

Na Yuan believed the evil doctor would actually toss him onto the ground and he immediately stopped crying and he didn't hit the evil doctor anymore.

No one had hit Na Yuan's bottom before the evil doctor hit his bottom. If he was naughty, his daddy would only threaten to hit his bottom or his daddy would put a hand on his bottom and pretended to hit. His daddy was nothing like the evil doctor!

Shi Dan Ping felt it was necessary to discipline young children when they misbehaved. Na Yuan quietly rested a little chubby head on his shoulder, Na Yuan cried quietly but Na Yuan didn't dare to be noisy. Shi Dan Ping thought Na Yuan's little chubby body was like a little dumpling.

Inside Mrs Chen's home, Na Na didn't know her precious darling nephew was quietly suffering under Shi Dan Ping's discipline style. Na Na was too busy packing little Yuan's clothes, school bag, books and stationery whilst she

explained to Mrs Chen that little Yuan would be living with Na Na. 'Granny, little Yuan will be living with me and I'll take care of little Yuan from now on.'

Mrs Chen felt guilty and she pulled Na Na's shirt sleeve. 'Little girl, do you blame me for not taking good care of little Yuan?'

Na Na shook her head. 'Granny, we're a family. You've watched Na Hao and I grow up and you've taken good care of us. How can I blame you for not taking good care of little Yuan? This situation was unexpected, I don't blame you.' She sighed helplessly. 'After the accident, even though little Yuan hasn't asked why Na Hao isn't here... I know little Yuan is frightened and doesn't feel safe. Granny, you can see little Yuan doesn't want to be separated from me. He's still young, you've exerted a lot of energy to look after him. Granny, don't worry, little Yuan and I will come here to visit you often.'

Mrs Chen knew she was at an advanced age and it was hard for her to move and stand for too long. She felt guilty she couldn't take little Yuan for a stroll after dinner and little Yuan choked on a fish bone from the fish broth she made. She agreed it was better for little Yuan to live with Na Na who could take better care of little Yuan.

Mrs Chen felt lighter. 'Little girl, when you're free make sure you come here to visit me, I'll be waiting here for you. You should think about yourself too. The little boy who came with you today is good quality, you should hold onto him.'

Na Na shook her head. 'Granny... Doctor Shi and I were working together today. He just kindly drove me here, there's nothing between us. Besides... Doctor Shi is a genius, has a high status and rich. He wouldn't be interested in someone like me who is just a small nurse.'

'Little girl! You don't know how many good qualities you have. Whoever is lucky enough to marry you will have the blessings of eighteen generations. Don't think nonsense, how can he look down on you? Listen to me, you need to hold onto the little boy,' Mrs Chen said.

Na Na said bye to Mrs Chen and she ran downstairs with a suitcase of little Yuan's belongings. In Shi Dan Ping's car, little Yuan sat at the back and Shi Dan Ping sat at the front and Na Na felt tension in the air.

Na Yuan saw his little aunt and his eyes lit up. He was about to complain about

the evil doctor, but the evil doctor turned around and gave him a scary look so he swallowed his complaints.

Na Na sat at the back with little Yuan and comforted him. She stroked little Yuan's soft hair and she spoke gently. 'Does your throat still hurt? Do you want to drink water?'

Na Yuan rested his little chubby body on his little aunt's chest. 'I don't want to drink water... granny gave me vinegar to drink. I didn't want to drink it but granny squeezed my nose.'

Na Yuan rubbed his little round belly pitifully.

Na Na rubbed little Yuan's head. 'Granny wanted you to drink the vinegar to soften the fish bone so your throat won't hurt anymore.'

Na Yuan understood and he nodded his head. 'When I go back home, I need to say thank you to granny.'

Shi Dan Ping parked his car at the hospital. He carried Na Yuan into the hospital to the ENT department and Na Na followed them.

Na Na thought it was good to have Shi Dan Ping take her and little Yuan because when they arrived at the ENT department, little Yuan was quickly examined by one of the ENT directors.

The ENT director heard Na Yuan choked on a fish bone and he immediately instructed Shi Dan Ping to sit and hold firmly onto Na Yuan. He shone a medical penlight down Na Yuan's throat and he assessed the situation.

'I don't need to use a laryngoscope. I'll give the little boy a LA mouthwash to relax his throat and I'll use forceps to take out the fish bone,' the ENT director said.

Na Na's heart relaxed. If the ENT director said he only needed to use forceps to take out the fish bone then the fish bone wasn't stuck too deep inside little Yuan's throat.

Na Yuan didn't like the mouthwash but he kept his mouth wide opened. He felt something cold inside his mouth, his throat hurt for a moment and the nice uncle doctor praised him 'You're a good precious darling, very brave!'

Na Yuan's eyes widened and he stared at the little fish bone on the table. He laughed sweetly. 'Thank you uncle doctor!'

'What a good little boy!' the ENT director said.

Na Na exhaled gently and she thanked the ENT director. Then she held little Yuan's hand and they walked outside toward the elevator.

Shi Dan Ping followed the little rabbit and Na Yuan toward the elevator. Shi Dan Ping silently listened to the little rabbit patiently answered each of Na Yuan's trivial questions... he thought in the future if the little rabbit gave birth to his child, the little rabbit would always prioritise their child no matter how busy she was. Their child wouldn't grow up lonely and neglected by their parents.

Shi Dan Ping startled himself, he felt after many years, perhaps... he finally found what he was looking for and wanted most.

Outside the hospital, Na Na pointed to hers and Mao Dan's building. 'Little Yuan, that's where I'm living now. It's not a nice home... but do you want to live there with me for a while? After I find a nicer home for us, we'll move out together, ok?'

Na Yuan was surprised and happy. He lifted his head and he laughed happily. 'Little aunt, do you mean I can always live with you now?'

Na Na laughed and she nodded her head. 'There's a childcare at the hospital too. In the future wherever I'm living, little Yuan will live with me too, ok?'

Na Yuan nodded his head excitedly. 'Yes!'

'I have a home nearby and there's a spare room. You and the little boy can move into the spare room,' Shi Dan Ping offered impulsively.

End of Chapter Twenty-Two

Related

Twenty-Three

Chapter Twenty-Three

Na Na was shocked. She thought she misheard Shi Dan Ping's offer.

'Finding good accommodation nearby the hospital is hard. Think about the little boy. It's best if you and the little boy live with me, the spare room is spacious enough for two people,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'How can I shamelessly accept your offer? Doctor Shi, you've helped me a lot, I-' Na Na said.

'Spare me courteous words. It's decided. I'll take you and the little boy to my home,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na knew everything Shi Dan Ping said sounded reasonable. But she couldn't intrude Dr Shi's home. 'Perhaps... will we be troubling you?'

Na Na didn't understand when she and Shi Dan Ping's relationship suddenly became close enough for him to ask her to move in with him.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit hesitated was still standing on the same spot. He frowned and he felt jealous. 'You can't trouble me, but you want to go and trouble Wei Zhexue?'

'Huh?' Na Na asked.

'You and Wei Zhexue have only met a few times and you can ask him for help. You and I have been together for a long time. We've slept together in the same bed and we've been intimate with each other. What's not good about me?' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na stared suspiciously at the man in front of her. She was suspicious Dr Shi was possessed... why else would he seemed so different than usual?

Shi Dan Ping could read the little rabbit's thoughts in the little rabbit's round eyes, and he realised acted too eager to get the little rabbit to move in with him.

Shi Dan Ping coughed and regained his composure. 'Don't tell me... you thought I was going to give you free accommodation. Later housework duties

will be handed over to you, and every day you need to cook three nutritious meals. Any other requests... wait until I've thought it through carefully and I'll let you know.'

Na Na exhaled gently. It turned out, Dr Shi was missing one cheap nanny. As long as there was a suitable room for young children to live even if she had to be a nanny, she was still grateful.

'I'm really thankful to you Doctor Shi,' Na Na said. She squatted in front of little Yuan and she asked for little Yuan's opinion. 'Little Yuan, Mao Dan and my home is a small home and it has many cockroaches and mice... uncle agreed for us to live with him in his home. Can we live at uncle's home for a little while?'

Na Yuan widened his eyes and he pouted his little lips. 'No!'

Shi Dan Ping looked coldly at Na Yuan who dared to reject him.

Na Na wasn't clear why little Yuan objected living together with Dr Shi to that extent. Although little Yuan and Dr Shi had a small dispute in the staff room a while ago, but little Yuan usually slept one night and little Yuan would forget about small disputes.

Whereas Shi Dan Ping understood why Na Yuan didn't want to live with Shi Dan Ping, because he secretly disciplined Na Yuan behind the little rabbit's back.

Na Na stroked little Yuan's head and she spoke gently. 'Little Yuan, be good. Tell me why you don't want to live with uncle?'

Na Yuan lifted his head and his eyes were brimmed with tears. He fisted his chubby little hands and he spoke loudly. 'I don't need the bad uncle to marry you and become my little uncle!'

Na Na felt dizzy and she didn't know how to react to little Yuan's words.

'Little aunt, the bad uncle was intimate with you,' Na Yuan said.

Shi Dan Ping was in a state of bliss being referred to as 'little uncle' to the point he let Na Yuan off the hook for being rude. Shi Dan Ping silently calmed himself down for a long time before he remembered to gage the little rabbit's reaction.

Na Na was in a daze for what she felt was half a day. Her face gradually turned red and she didn't dare to look at Shi Dan Ping. She spoke softly. 'Don't take

what little children say as the truth.'

Na Na pulled little Yuan closer. 'What makes you think if I live with uncle is no different from uncle and I... have something?'

Na Yuan didn't know what his little aunt meant by 'have something.'

Na Na sighed. 'Little Yuan, we're just temporarily living in uncle's home. Living with him doesn't mean that uncle is your little uncle.'

'But, when I wanted to live with Linh Linh every day, daddy said I need to be an adult and marry Linh Linh then I can live with her. Little aunt, if the bad uncle doesn't marry you then how can you two live together?' Na Yuan said.

Na Na didn't know how to explain the situation to little Yuan.

Shi Dan Ping enjoyed seeing the little rabbit's face turned red from shyness for a while and he kindly took the initiative to explain to Na Yuan. 'What your daddy said was right. You need to be an adult before you can live with a girl. Uncle and your little aunt are both adults. Adults can have something and they can do anything they think about.'

Na Na was speechless and her cheeks blushed bright pink. No matter how she thought about Shi Dan Ping's words, she felt Shi Dan Ping spoke stranger than usual.

Na Yuan blinked his innocent eyes several times. 'Ok, little aunt. You and uncle can do anything you like together.'

Na Na was still speechless.

Na Yuan used his chubby hand to pat his little aunt's cheek like an adult would to reassure a child. 'Little aunt, go ahead and live together with uncle. I just need to follow you and it'll be ok.'

Na Na was still speechless. Na Na cried without tears. She didn't know if she was too innocent or if little Yuan spoke too carelessly. She didn't know what to say or how to react.

Shi Dan Ping was satisfied. He smiled and he nodded his head. 'The little boy agreed. Then follow me home.'

Na Na was still speechless, she didn't know how refute Shi Dan Ping's logic.

Shi Dan Ping led the little rabbit and the little boy to his home, it took them less than ten minute to walk from the hospital to his home.

The hospital head hunted Shi Dan Ping back then and the hospital gave him a place nearby the hospital as an extra incentive. Shi Dan Ping felt it would be a waste not to buy the place from the hospital as a good investment so back then he bought it.

Shi Dan Ping lived nearby the hospital but it was a bit far from his family home. He saw his investment home as a good convenient resting place, some afternoons he'd take naps in his investment home.

Na Na thought Dr Shi suffered from the common clean freak OCD like most of his co-workers. She expected his home would be a similar layout to the hospital, clean, tidy, colourless and cold.

The moment Na Na entered Shi Dan Ping's home, she realised she was wrong. She was shocked his home was furnished warmly.

The walls were painted a warm yellow, it brightened the rooms like sunlight and it made Na Na felt relaxed and comfortable.

Na Yuan forgot about why he opposed living in the uncle doctor's house. He happily walked into each room and he curiously looked at the new surroundings.

Shi Dan Ping gave the little rabbit and Na Yuan a tour of his home. 'These two guest rooms are left empty. You can decorate the rooms however you like. This is my room and over there is the kitchen.'

Inside the two guest rooms apart from a bed, there were no other furnishings. Na Na was grateful even if the two guest rooms were empty but at least they were clean and suitable for her and little Yuan to live together.

Shi Dan Ping silently made a plan. Firstly he needed to buy a few furnishings. He knew the little rabbit didn't mind the state of the two guest rooms, but he needed to earn the little boy's heart.

Shi Dan Ping followed the little rabbit who was absorbing the little rabbit's new home for a long time. Then he gave the little rabbit his spare house keys. 'About the childcare, it's not as fast to enrol the little boy like I thought it would be. It may take a few days.'

Na Na knew it wouldn't be smooth to enrol little Yuan half way through a year. 'It's ok. I've really troubled you... besides, little Yuan's still sick. I want to stay home with him for the next two days.'

Na Yuan still had a fever and he was tired easily. After his excitement about living with his little aunt wore off, he was sleepy.

Shi Dan Ping wanted to spend more time with the little rabbit, but he couldn't think of anything to stall her. He reluctantly nodded his head. 'Go take the little boy inside the guest room to sleep.'

Na Na carried little Yuan. She took two steps toward the room and she turned around to face Dr Shi. 'Doctor Shi, rest assured, I'll cook delicious nutritious meals.'

Shi Dan Ping was happily shocked. He coughed awkwardly and he nodded his head.

Na Na smiled brightly. Her round face lit up with gratefulness. She used all her strength to carry the heavy little Yuan to the bed inside a guest room.

End of Chapter Twenty-Three

Related

Twenty-Four

Chapter Twenty-Four

After little Yuan was asleep, Na Na returned to hers and Mao Dan's home and Na Na packed some of her clothes and makeup into a suitcase. Although Na Na wanted to live with little Yuan at Shi Dan Ping's home, she felt uneasy that they wouldn't be staying long at Shi Dan Ping's home. She decided to leave most of her belongings behind in case Shi Dan Ping changed his mind and he didn't want to live with her and little Yuan anymore.

Mao Dan wasn't home so Na Na wrote a note to inform Mao Dan that she and little Yuan would be living together at a friend's place for a short period and Na Na reminded Mao Dan to be extra careful whilst living alone.

When Mao Dan arrived home from work, she read the note and it took her a long time to recover from shock.

Na Na returned to Shi Dan Ping's home but he wasn't at home and she exhaled gently. She decided to clean and tidy his home whilst he was out.

At the hospital Shi Dan An was in her office writing medical reports and updating her patients' hospital records. She sighed, she felt the good thing about being chief of a hospital was the chief could delegate someone else to do the paperwork and the chief just needed to check the details were correct and sign.

When Shi Dan Ping entered Shi Dan An's office, she just finished writing some medical reports, she leaned back on her chair and she cracked her knuckles.

Although Shi Dan Ping and Shi Dan An's offices at the hospital were separated by one floor, it was the first time Shi Dan Ping visited Shi Dan An's office. They had an unspoken agreement to avoid each other at the hospital.

Shi Dan Ping's sudden appearance in Shi Dan An's office gave her a shock.

Shi Dan An smiled triumphantly, she realised her older brother would only visit her if he needed to grovel for a favour. 'Oh, what wind brought my dearest and loving older brother here?'

The green veins on Shi Dan Ping's temples were more visible than usual. 'I came here because I need to ask you a favour.'

'I was right, our sibling telepathic connection is strong. Ask away, siblings don't need to be courteous with each other,' Shi Dan An said.

'You and Tu Zhu have a close relationship. Can you ask him to help enrol a little boy into the hospital's childcare for me?' Shi Dan Ping asked shamelessly.

Shi Dan Ping knew Tu Zhu's mum was in charge of the administration of the hospital's childcare. Shi Dan Ping's younger sister was close friends with Tu Zhu. If Shi Dan Ping got his younger sister to ask Tu Zhu to help enrol Na Yuan then Tu Zhu couldn't refuse.

'Oh?' Shi Dan An asked and she looked curiously at Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. 'The little boy isn't my son.'

Shi Dan An was disappointed and she shrugged her shoulders. 'If he's not your son, why should you care? When did you become a good Samaritan?'

Shi Dan An knew her older brother wasn't someone others could easily be close with and it was rare her older brother would be interested in someone enough to do a favour for them. She knew it must be someone important to her older brother for him to not be prideful and ask her for help. It made her curious who her older brother was interested in.

Shi Dan Ping resorted to blackmail. 'Little sister... if dad knew you returned from the army for two years and you dared to abuse your position to alter a patient's record...'

Shi Dan An's complexion paled.

'Knowing dad's personality, who knows how dad will punish you,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An glared at Shi Dan Ping and she gritted her teeth. 'How did you find out?'

'Good or bad, you're my little sister. Even if I don't see you, can't I still care about my little sister?' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An frowned and she laughed coldly. 'Forget it, my good older brother.'

Aren't you worried I'll give you trouble? You and Shi Huai Ren are the same, scared I'll stain the Shi household name!

'Shi Dan An, don't forget your family name is Shi,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An couldn't refute.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. 'Every person's life is equally valuable. You wanted to save someone but you unintentionally hurt someone else-'

'Don't say anymore! You don't need to care about my business,' Shi Dan An said.

'Regardless, the news have spread to dad. Shi Dan An, do you think dad will let you off lightly by revoking your doctor's certification?'

Shi Dan An was immersed in sadness and she spoke in a helpless tone of voice. 'I still have work to do. I won't escort you out. Send me the little boy's personal information. Rest assured after work I'll go find Tu Zhu and he'll help you enrol the little boy.'

Shi Dan Ping sighed and he reluctantly left his younger sister's office.

Shi Dan An was Shi Dan Ping's only sibling, but his younger sister wasn't close to him. He remembered when Shi Dan An was a toddler she was raised by their relatives instead of living with him and their parents. Shi Dan An's childhood wasn't lonely like his, she was surrounded by their cousins and loved by their aunts and uncles. Back then he was jealous of his younger sister.

Shi Dan Ping's jealousy turned into resentment. Each time Shi Dan An returned to their family home, he bullied her and he didn't understand he should have loved his younger sister back then.

Shi Dan Ping thought as a result when he and Shi Dan An became adults, they didn't get along and if they ran into each other they always opposed each other. Although he wanted to reconcile with his younger sister and be a good older brother to her, his younger sister always provoked him if he tried to reconcile with her.

Shi Dan Ping returned home and he saw the little rabbit was doing housework. In the kitchen he saw sweets for young children and in the bathroom was a

child's toilet seat. The changes were subtle but it gave him a sense of peace and added warmth to his cold and lifeless home.

'Doctor Shi, you're back,' Na Na said. She wore gloves, she picked up little Yuan's toilet seat and washed it in the bathroom sink. 'Doctor Shi, I checked your kitchen cupboards and fridge. It's bare, there weren't even sauces or salt. I emptied the expired milk... tomorrow I'll pop home and I'll pack some pots and pans and I'll bring it here. Let's cook meals at home, it's healthier than eating take away food.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't store any kitchen appliances or cutlery because he just used his investment home as a resting place. 'You don't need to trouble yourself. Later we'll go to the shops nearby and buy everything you need.'

Na Na wiped little Yuan's toilet seat dry, she put it back on the toilet, took off her gloves, soaped and washed her hands. 'No need to waste money. Besides, I'm just staying here temporarily-'

'I'm not used to using someone else's things,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na throat tensed. She was embarrassed and she laughed awkwardly. 'I'm sorry, I forgot.'

Shi Dan Ping frowned, he didn't intend for his words to sound harsh. He just didn't want the little rabbit to exhaust herself by running back and forth.

Na Na didn't take Dr Shi's words to heart. She knew his personality wasn't good natured and she was used to being provoked by his poisonous mouth. She thought a little embarrassment was trivial.

Na Na tidied the kitchen whilst Shi Dan Ping rested on the sofa. When she was boiling water she noticed he looked lonely by himself in living room. She poured boiled water into a cup and she brought it to the living room for him.

'How does your older brother treat you?' Shi Dan Ping asked impulsively.

Na Na didn't know why Shi Dan Ping asked her about Na Hao, but she nodded her head and she answered honestly. 'Of course he's good to me. Since I was a baby, my big brother brought me everywhere with him and he meticulously looked after me.'

Shi Dan Ping pointed at the chair in front of him, the little rabbit understood and she sat on the chair. 'If you're asking to what extent is my brother good to me, I can't tell you everything he's done for me in one sitting.'

Shi Dan Ping stared at the cup of water the little rabbit poured for him. 'Do you and your older brother argue?'

Na Na laughed. 'Of course! Sometimes my big brother is angry at me and he'll ignore me. But I just need to cry and his anger will melt away.'

Shi Dan Ping sighed, no wonder the little rabbit saw her nephew as a precious darling. He never asked the little rabbit why she was looking after her nephew, because he felt something must have happened in her family so he didn't want to ask her in case it made her sad to think about her family. He quickly averted her attention. 'I just came back from the hospital. I requested leave for you. Head nurse Liu wasn't there but Doctor Zhang approved your leave.'

Na Na was grateful. 'I'm sorry, I've troubled you.'

Although Shi Dan Ping didn't think the little rabbit was troublesome, he nodded his head, drank his cup of water, stood and he walked back to his room.

In the evening, Shi Dan Ping took the little rabbit and Na Yuan to eat dinner at a nearby restaurant. After dinner they walked to the supermarkets together.

After Na Yuan napped, his fever was gone, he was energised like other young children and he wanted to run around the supermarkets.

The supermarkets was crowded. Shi Dan Ping helped pushed the trolley, whilst the little rabbit and Na Yuan chose what items to buy. Usually Shi Dan Ping hated noisy crowded places. In the past he rarely went to the supermarkets. If he did, he quickly bought what he needed and quickly disappeared, unlike most other people who took their time choosing what to buy.

Shi Dan Ping happily watched the little rabbit hopped around the crowded supermarkets and how she battled to capture the best discounted items. He saw the healthy pink glow on her cheeks and he understood why other people liked to go to the supermarkets.

Shi Dan Ping paid for the items at the counter. Then he carried most of the shopping bags home. The little rabbit and Na Yuan bought too many items so

even Na Yuan had to carry a light shopping bag home.

End of Chapter Twenty-Four

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty-Five (Part 1)

Inside Shi Dan Ping's home there were two bathrooms, one connected to his bedroom and a guest bathroom near the living room. The guest bathroom door was a switchable glass door. If a guest used it in the morning, privacy wasn't a problem. But if a guest used it in the evening... privacy was a problem.

Na Na bathed little Yuan, she supervised him whilst he brushed his teeth and she tucked him in bed.

Na Na walked back to the guest bathroom. After Na Na, little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping returned from dinner, Shi Dan Ping stayed inside his room. But Na Na felt there was no guarantee Shi Dan Ping wouldn't go outside later, she didn't want to be embarrassed and she decided it was safer to switch off the bathroom light.

It was dark in the bathroom, but the lighting from the living room was enough for Na Na to shower without the bathroom light on. She took off her clothes and she comfortably showered.

Inside Shi Dan Ping's bedroom, he secretly searched online – 'What do five year old boys like most? How to teach young children to be good listeners? How to live and get along with young children?'

Shi Dan Ping scanned the search results and he clicked on blogs written by mums, which gave parenting advice.

Shi Dan Ping read for a while and he was thirsty. He minimised the blog screen and he walked outside to get a glass of water from the kitchen. When he walked passed the living room he noticed the guest bathroom light wasn't on, but he heard the sounds of running water. Immediately he walked to the guest bathroom door, it was locked so he knocked on the door.

Shi Dan Ping heard the sounds of running water stopped and he felt it was eerily quiet. Then he heard the little rabbit spoke softly. 'I... I'm showering... Doctor Shi, is something wrong?'

Shi Dan Ping coughed awkwardly and he spoke calmly. 'Is the bathroom light

broken?’

‘No... no, it isn’t broken,’ Na Na said.

‘Then why didn’t you turn on the light? You can’t find the light switch?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na knew Shi Dan Ping couldn’t see her as long as the bathroom light was off, but she was still embarrassed, her face flushed bright red and she covered her breasts with her hands.

‘I... I can see. It’s nothing, I want to conserve electricity. Hehe... it saves money and environmentally friendly,’ Na Na lied.

‘Do you think I’m a stingy man? Even if you live here, I can still afford to pay the electricity and water bills!’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘No, I didn’t mean... it’s because...’ Na Na stammered.

Na Na cried without tears. She reasoned Shi Dan Ping saw her naked before and he was a doctor who was used to seeing naked bodies. She reluctantly stepped out from under the shower head.

She switched on the light. It was a soft click, but she felt it was louder than thunder. Immediately the bathroom was bright as sunlight.

Shi Dan Ping saw the bathroom door turned from translucent to transparent. Behind the transparent door, under a bright light was the little rabbit naked. The little rabbit stood frozen, she covered her breasts, and her back faced him but he saw the rest of her naked body clearly.

Shi Dan Ping was immersed in his state of bliss like a ship above calm ocean waves. He felt his whole body was boiled whilst his eyes lingered on the little rabbit’s smooth milky skin, which was slightly pink from the hot steam.

Na Na sneezed. She realised she stood motionless for a long time and Shi Dan Ping still stood outside the door.

Shi Dan Ping swallowed his saliva and he spoke in a husky voice. ‘You... continue showering, don’t catch a cold.’

Shi Dan Ping slowly walked backward away from the door. He realised the little rabbit didn’t know there was a hidden screen above the door, which could be

pulled down for privacy. If he could enjoy the view each day, he was going to pretend he didn't know about the screen. He slowly inched back to his room. Inside his room he laughed an evil laugh.

Shi Dan Ping wasn't foolish enough to tell the little rabbit about the screen. He knew he shouldn't be too rushed or he wouldn't get to eat the little rabbit dumpling. There was an evil gleam in his eyes and he slowly licked his lips.

Na Na heard Shi Dan Ping walked back to his room. She felt it was safe to walk back under the shower head. She quickly showered, dried her body with a towel and she put on her night gown. She grabbed her dirty clothes and she ran like a thief to her room.

Inside Na Na's room, she rested her back against the door and she exhaled gently. She wasn't certain if she wouldn't be embarrassed the next time she showered.

That night Shi Dan Ping slept peacefully. He dreamt he sat in front of a table, he held a knife and fork in his hands. On the table was a hot milky white round dumpling. He cut opened the dumpling into four or five pieces and it revealed delectable fresh meat.

End of Chapter Twenty-Five (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty-Five (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Dan Ping woke up early in the morning and he felt hungry. He brushed and washed his face. He walked outside and the aroma from the kitchen made his stomach rumble.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit was happily cooking in the kitchen, he licked his lips and he felt a different kind of hunger.

Na Yuan rubbed his sleepy eyes and he walked toward the guest bathroom. He saw the bad uncle stood in the living room like a hungry wolf, who was staring at his little aunt. He thought the bad uncle looked too scary and he nearly soiled his pants. 'Uncle, what are you doing?'

Na Na heard little Yuan's voice and she turned around. The summer morning sunlight gave her cheeks a healthy pink blush, she smiled at little Yuan and Dr Shi. 'Doctor Shi and little Yuan, hurry up and brush your teeth and wash your face. Breakfast is nearly ready.'

Na Yuan cheered and his little chubby legs ran to the bathroom.

Shi Dan Ping pretended he didn't see or hear the little rabbit. He sat at the dining table like a rich master who waited for a servant to serve him breakfast and tea.

Na Na laughed at Shi Dan Ping's cold attitude, she turned around and she resumed cooking breakfast.

Shi Dan Ping frowned, he quietly patted the left side of his chest. He felt like it was gradually harder to control the strange feeling in his heart.

The little rabbit cooked sago congee and a sweet taro and coconut sago dessert for breakfast. Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit's cooking skills were on par with gourmet restaurants.

Na Yuan loved sweets! His little aunt fed him a spoonful of sago congee but before he could gobble it, the bad uncle scolded him.

Shi Dan Ping was unhappy and he spoke coldly. 'Little boy, you're this big and you still need someone to feed you, useless.'

Na Yuan protested and he glared at the bad uncle.

Na Na got a headache. She put little Yuan's bowl of sago congee down on the dining table in front of little Yuan. She rubbed little Yuan's head and she consoled little Yuan. 'Uncle hopes little Yuan will grow up to be an independent man. Quickly eat your breakfast while it's hot, if it's cold it won't taste delicious.'

Na Yuan's chest huffed and puffed. He picked up his little spoon of hot sago congee, he pouted his lips and blew on it then he slowly ate it bit by bit.

Na Na didn't know what to do about Shi Dan Ping's poisonous mouth. She awkwardly laughed and she ate her own bowl of sago congee.

After breakfast Shi Dan Ping changed clothes and packed his suitcase for work. The little rabbit was like his little wife, she escorted him to the elevator and she spoke softly. 'Can you let head nurse Liu know about my approved leave?'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he entered the elevator.

Shi Dan Ping walked to his work office at the hospital, changed his clothes and he walked to the staff room for the morning briefing.

Liu Nan walked into the staff room and she saw Shi Dan Ping sat on his usual chair and he was reading a newspaper. But she felt there was something subtly different about him. She sat on the chair opposite him and she made small talk. 'Do you have surgery scheduled this morning?'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. Then he thought about Na Yuan, he lifted his head and he looked at Liu Nan. 'What do young children like?'

Liu Nan widened her eyes. 'Why are you suddenly asking me this?'

'What should I buy for a young boy about five or six years old?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Liu Nan didn't press for further clarification, she thought Shi Dan Ping probably wanted to buy a birthday present for a young relative. 'Mmm... perhaps racing car toys, action figure toys or fighting video games. Most young boys like those kind of toys.'

Shi Dan Ping memorised Liu Nan's advice and he nodded his head. 'Ah, this morning Na Na asked me to let you know Doctor Zhang approved her leave for two days.'

'What happened to Na Na? Why did she ask you pass on the message instead of telling me herself? Is she ok?' Liu Nan asked in a panicked voice.

'It's nothing. She's just taking leave to look after a sick child at our home,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Liu Nan was shocked. She didn't know if the youth of the world progressed too quick or if she was too old. Just the other day she was teasing Shi Dan Ping and Na Na about their bed life. But it turned out Shi Dan Ping and Na Na lived together and had a love child together!

End of Chapter Twenty-Five (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Twenty-Six (Part 1)

Liu Nan snapped out of her chaotic thoughts. Her life experience logic cleared her head. She looked suspiciously at Shi Dan Ping. 'The simpleton is living with you? How did you trick her to live with you?'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. 'I need to trick her? You know exactly what the condition of the hospital's accommodation for staff is like. I just waved a finger and she willingly followed me home.'

Liu Nan was sceptical it was that easy. She laughed mockingly. 'Little Ping, be honest. Confess, why did Na Na agree to live with you?'

Shi Dan Ping wanted to avoid explaining, but he didn't expect Liu Nan to be persistent to that extent. 'She wants her nephew to live with her so she can take care of him. The condition of her home wasn't suitable for young children. She couldn't find another suitable home nearby the hospital for her and her nephew, and I suggested they live with me.'

Liu Nan understood, she met Na Yuan and she realised Na Na's family circumstances weren't something Na Na wanted to share with others. She finally understood why there was a subtle change in Shi Dan Ping, it was spring specks in his cold eyes which wasn't there before.

Liu Nan laughed deviously. 'Little Ping, spring has sprouted in your heart.'

Shi Dan Ping folded his newspaper and he raised his eyebrows. 'Spring heart? With who?'

'Who else? If you didn't love the simpleton, why else would you ask her to live with you? You even came to me asking for advice about how to win her nephew's heart. If you didn't love her, you wouldn't bother being a good Samaritan. You had your eyes set on her long ago,' Liu Nan said triumphantly.

'Her? She's round and a simpleton. I'm not blind or suffering from brain damage. How can I possibly be interested in her?' Shi Dan Ping said sarcastically.

Liu Nan shrugged her shoulders in disbelief. 'You shouldn't lie. I want to see

which direction you'll face crying when someone else steals her away.'

Shi Dan Ping heard the familiar footsteps, which belonged to Zhang Wei Dong. Shi Dan Ping closed his mouth, unfolded his newspaper and he pretended to read during the morning staff briefing.

The moment the briefing ended, Shi Dan Ping was the first to leave the staff room.

Zhang Wei Dong and Liu Nan were the last two to leave the staff room. Zhang Wei Dong noticed Shi Dan Ping was in a bad mood and he grilled Liu Nan. 'What's wrong with Doctor Shi? Did you tease him?'

It was hard for Zhang Wei Dong not to notice Shi Dan Ping's bad mood. During the briefing, Shi Dan Ping's intense scowl made most of the staff stutter whilst they reported about their patients.

Liu Nan laughed deviously. 'It wasn't me. I was talking about matters of the heart with Doctor Shi. I didn't get to finish because someone walked into the staff room.'

'What do you mean?' Zhang Wei Dong asked.

Liu Nan lost her patience. She waved her hand and she scolded Zhang Wei Dong. 'Go and start your work. You can't even connect thoughts. What do you know?'

Zhang Wei Dong didn't understand why he received a scolding. He stroked his nose and he left the staff room.

Liu Nan was in high spirits for the rest of the work day. In contrast Shi Dan Ping maintained his bad mood for the rest of the work day.

Shi Dan Ping didn't deny he was interested in Na Na and he didn't deny he was falling for Na Na either. But he didn't like being coerced by Liu Nan to reflect on his feelings for Na Na. He knew he was love sick. If he wasn't falling for Na Na then he wouldn't let her into his world and he wouldn't impulsively keep her beside him.

In the past Shi Dan Ping experienced love but he never felt that strange kind of love until he met the little rabbit, who was able to cloud his logic and affected his

moods. He didn't understand why he just needed to stand in front of the rabbit who was a simpleton dumpling and his usual logic and calmness would collapse. He closed his eyes and he asked his heart what was love.

In the past Shi Dan Ping thought love was a primitive human emotion. He thought the initial feelings of love were intense, but after a period the feelings of love lessened until it completely disappeared.

Shi Dan Ping didn't know if the coincidental meeting with the rabbit would be another period, which different intense feelings of love were stimulated and how long that strange kind of love would last for. He was immersed in his thoughts the whole way home.

End of Chapter Twenty-Six (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Twenty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Dan Ping took out his keys from his pants pockets but before he unlocked his front door, it was opened from the inside. The little rabbit poked her head out, she was smiling brightly and Na Yuan was hugging the little rabbit's leg.

Shi Dan Ping's startled state broke when he heard the little rabbit laughed sweetly. 'You're home. Dinner's ready. Go wash your hands and we can eat dinner together.'

Na Yuan poked his head out and he boasted to the bad uncle. 'Little aunt cooked sweet and sour pork ribs for dinner. Her sweet and sour pork ribs are always delicious!'

Shi Dan Ping calmly walked inside the house and he saw a pair of slippers was prepared for him.

Shi Dan Ping felt the usual cold house was filled with the aroma of the little rabbit's home cooked sweet and sour pork ribs and Na Yuan chatted non-stop. Shi Dan Ping usually hated noise, but the little rabbit and Na Yuan gave him a sense of belonging in an ordinary family and they warmed his heart. Shi Dan Ping was happy to be home, he relaxed his body and he sat at the dining table.

Shi Dan Ping didn't care if it was a primitive human reaction or hormones, which temporarily controlled his mind. He decided to let it naturally take its course. He reasoned it was like taking vitamins, it didn't radically enhanced the body but it psychologically reassured the body.

Na Yuan waited patiently for the bad uncle to pick up chopsticks. The moment the bad uncle touched chopsticks, Na Yuan cheered and he happily picked up his little spoon. 'Little aunt, I want to eat a rib.'

Na Na gently patted little Yuan's back. 'Remember not to eat too quickly.'

Na Yuan watched his little aunt's chopsticks picked up a rib, but Na Yuan was disappointed his little aunt put it in the bad uncle's bowl.

'Doctor Shi, taste it. If you don't like the flavours, I'll fix it to your taste,' Na Na

said warmly.

Shi Dan Ping calmly picked up the rib the little rabbit put in his bowl. He tasted the rib, it was delicious. He spoke calmly. 'Can I have more?'

Na Na nodded her head and she laughed happily. 'Then make sure you eat a lot.'

Na Yuan looked back and forth at his little aunt and the bad uncle, he was unhappy his little aunt's attention was only focused on the bad uncle.

Shi Dan Ping looked at Na Yuan whilst he put another piece of rib meat into his mouth and he chewed slowly. He saw Na Yuan's eyes were teary, and he thought it was Na Yuan's fault for showing off the chicken leg in the staff room when he was hungry.

Na Yuan put his little spoon down and he burst into tears. 'Little aunt is bad! Now you have another man, you don't care about me anymore. I want to go home.'

Na Na immediately lifted little Yuan onto her lap, she hugged him and she consoled him. 'What happened? Why are you crying? Won't you hungry before? Why aren't you eating anymore?'

Na Yuan cried on his little aunt's chest. 'Little aunt is a bad girl! You have a new man and you abandoned your old love. Now you have the bad uncle, you don't love me anymore.'

Na Na was embarrassed, she lifted her head to look at Shi Dan Ping and she silently apologised.

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. 'You don't even have pubic hair, how can you count yourself as an old love?'

Shi Dan Ping couldn't believe in Na Yuan's world, Na Yuan was Yang Guo from the 'Return of the Condor Heroes' and the little rabbit wasn't Na Yuan's biological aunt.

Na Na patted little Yuan's back. 'Don't cry. My little precious darling is good. Little Yuan, you'll always be my precious darling. How can I not need you? Uncle hasn't ate my sweet and sour pork ribs before tonight, don't you want uncle to

have a taste? You know this is uncle's house. Be good, don't cry.'

Shi Dan Ping was unhappy, he slammed his chopsticks onto the dining table, he stood and he spoke coldly. 'You two eat dinner. I'm tired, I'll go sleep first.'

'Doctor Shi-' Na Na called.

Shi Dan Ping slammed his bedroom door closed.

Na Na didn't understand what happened, little Yuan was crying and Shi Dan Ping suddenly had an angry outburst. She frowned, she didn't know what was wrong for her to know how to comfort little Yuan and calm Shi Dan Ping's anger.

Na Yuan stopped crying and his chubby little hand rubbed his little aunt's cheek. 'Little aunt, you're unhappy.'

Na Na shook her head and she forced a smile. 'No, I'm happy.'

Na Yuan remembered if he was unhappy, his little aunt would gently pat his head so he gently patted his little aunt's head. 'I know little aunt is unhappy. Are you unhappy because of me?'

Na Na kissed little Yuan's wet cheek. 'Little Yuan is good. I'm not unhappy because of little Yuan. I'm worried if uncle doesn't let us stay here, we won't have a safe home to live together... let's eat dinner.'

Na Yuan barely touched his little aunt's sweet and sour pork ribs that he loved eating, because he was scared the bad uncle would chase him and his little aunt outside of the house.

After dinner Na Na hesitated whether to bring a bowl of food to Shi Dan Ping's room, but she didn't want to intrude. She sighed and she decided if he was hungry later, she could cook him a late night snack.

Na Yuan saw his little aunt was washing dishes in the kitchen. He quickly brushed his teeth and he sneaked to the bad uncle's room.

Na Yuan softly opened the unlocked door and he cautiously walked inside the room. He saw the bad uncle was sitting on a chair in front of a desk and the bad uncle looked scary. He bowed his head and he slowly walked toward the bad uncle.

Shi Dan Ping calmly assessed Na Yuan. He thought Na Yuan was fed and

growing up well because Na Yuan’s little dumpling face looked like if he squeezed Na Yuan’s cheeks, water would flow out. ‘Little boy, what is it?’

End of Chapter Twenty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Twenty-Seven

Chapter Twenty-Seven

Shi Dan Ping waited for the little dumpling to lift his head. The little dumpling took out two lollipops that most young children loved to eat. The little dumpling's little chubby hand put the two lollipops on Shi Dan Ping's desk.

'Uncle, you didn't eat dinner. I'm giving my lollipops to you to eat,' Na Yuan said softly.

Shi Dan Ping loved sweets, but not melted lollipops.

The two melted lollipops were the same ones Na Yuan's little aunt bought for him after his teeth had cavities. Na Yuan wanted to save it for a special occasion to eat it, but he wanted to give it to the bad uncle so he and his little aunt could stay at the bad uncle's house. 'Uncle, this is all the lollipops I have. I'm giving it all to uncle... uncle, I'm really sorry. I know I was bad. Uncle, don't be angry at me anymore.'

Na Yuan waited for the bad uncle to forgive him, but the bad uncle didn't say anything. Na Yuan's eyes were brimmed with tears like a puppy abandoned by its owner. 'I'll be good and I'll listen to uncle. Uncle, please don't chase me and little aunt away.'

Shi Dan Ping felt like someone squeezed his heart and his throat felt choked and it hurt for him to breathe. The heart ache he felt was more painful than his fear of making a mistake during surgery, which could worsen the patient's health.

Shi Dan Ping saw his younger self in Na Yuan's eyes. It was the same fear he felt when he heard his parent's phones rang, his parents would abandon him without hesitation after each work phone call and left him to grow up alone.

Shi Dan Ping didn't know what to say to Na Yuan, who was scared of not having a home, scared of not having anyone to lean on and most of all Na Yuan seemed scared none of Na Yuan's family members needed Na Yuan.

Shi Dan Ping calmly lifted his hand and his fingers squeezed the little

dumpling's chubby cheek.

Na Yuan's cheek was pulled in different directions by the bad uncle. Na Yuan was angry but he didn't dare to say anything. He gritted his teeth and endured his cheek being tortured.

Shi Dan Ping thought a young child's cheek was soft and fun to squeeze. He squeezed Na Yuan's cheek until he felt dribble on his hand. 'Uncle won't chase you away.'

Na Yuan's eyes lit up. He wanted to cheer and jump, but the bad uncle opened his bad mouth. 'But, Na Na isn't yours.'

Na Yuan blinked his eyes, he nodded his head and he obediently agreed. 'Yes, uncle. Little aunt doesn't belong to me.'

Shi Dan Ping's body relaxed. He was satisfied, he thought young children were easy to raise.

'Because little aunt is my little aunt,' Na Yuan reasoned.

Shi Dan Ping's body tensed.

Na Yuan wasn't scared of the uncle anymore. He hugged the uncle's leg, he laughed happily to the point all his teeth and gums were visible. 'I'm little aunt's precious darling.' He patted uncle's thigh to comfort uncle. 'Uncle, do you want to be little aunt's precious darling too? If you're little aunt's precious darling, little aunt will love you and dote on you.'

Shi Dan Ping squinted the evil gleam in his eyes. The little rabbit didn't need to treat him really good, because he wanted to be the one to treat the rabbit really 'good.'

In the kitchen Na Na was busy tidying the kitchen, but she didn't know why she suddenly sneezed loudly.

Inside Shi Dan Ping's room, he lifted the little dumpling's shirt collar to pull the little dumpling off his leg then he tossed the little dumpling onto the bed.

Na Yuan cried out. He fell onto a giant spacious soft bed. He rolled around the bed and he laughed happily.

Shi Dan Ping jumped on the bed and he tickled the little dumpling. The little

dumpling laughed nonstop. 'Foolish meatball! This will teach you not to say nonsense.'

Na Yuan laughed too much that only his teeth were visible and ticklish tears came out of his closed eyes. 'Uncle... hehe... uncle... I was wrong... please let me go.'

Shi Dan Ping spared the little dumpling and he laid on the bed.

Na Yuan's arms and legs were free. He climbed onto uncle's flat stomach and his chubby bottom sat on uncle's flat stomach.

The heavy little dumpling sat on his stomach and he nearly choked from the unexpected weight on his stomach. 'Little boy, what do you want to do?'

Na Yuan laughed and he kissed uncle's shiny smooth chin.

In front of the little dumpling, Shi Dan Ping wasn't a neurosurgeon... he was a public road for a heavy little car to drive on, just because of the little dumpling's stinky mouth he was flattened.

Na Yuan moved around uncle's chest until he found a comfortable spot and he laid his body on the comfortable spot. He mumbled softly. 'If uncle isn't angry, I'll love uncle.'

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little dumpling who was laid on his chest and he felt another warm feeling sneaked into his heart. He didn't know what to reply to the little dumpling for a long time. When he was about to open his mouth, he the felt the little dumpling's dribble on his shirt, the little dumpling was asleep.

The little dumpling's chubby hands clutched Shi Dan Ping's shirt. He laughed softly, he thought the little dumpling had adorable chubby hands. He closed his eyes and slept too.

After Na Na finished cleaning and tidying the kitchen, she walked to Shi Dan Ping's room. She put her ear against the door, she didn't hear any sounds and she thought he was asleep. Then she walked to the guest bathroom to shower and brushed her teeth before she slept in her room.

The following morning Na Na woke up early, she washed her face and brushed her teeth. Then she crept to little Yuan's room and she was shocked little Yuan

wasn't on his bed and the bed didn't show any signs of anyone sleeping on it during the night. It was her worst nightmare. She panicked and she ran to Shi Dan Ping's room. She didn't knock and just opened the door. 'Shi-'

Na Na was relieved on the giant spacious bed was Shi Dan Ping who slept with one arm under his neck and on his chest was little Yuan who slept peacefully.

It was a long time since Na Na saw little Yuan slept peacefully. Usually little Yuan had nightmares, frowned and cried out in his sleep. She smiled brightly and her eyes stung. She crept outside, she softly closed the door and she cooked breakfast in the kitchen for little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping was woken up by hunger, because he didn't eat dinner and used up all his energy to play with the chubby little dumpling. In his drowsy state he smelt congee, he slowly opened his eyes and he stretched his arms. He forgot the chubby little dumpling slept on his chest until he felt the chubby little dumpling's saliva on one of his arms.

Shi Dan Ping used Na Yuan's shirt to wipe the saliva off his arm. He carefully and quietly got out of bed and he crept to the bathroom.

Inside the bathroom Shi Dan Ping pulled his pants down and he was ready to urinate when heard the bathroom door opened. He quickly pulled up his pants. 'Uncle, hold me up. I want to pee pee.'

Shi Dan Ping sighed helplessly. He lifted Na Yuan and he helped Na Yuan stand steady on the toilet seat. 'Go ahead and pee pee.'

Na Yuan scrunched his chubby face. 'Uncle, you need to make pee pee sounds then I can pee pee.'

Shi Dan Ping closed his eyes and he forced himself to make pee pee sounds and immediately he heard a sound like running water.

Shi Dan Ping helped Na Yuan washed his hands and he gently patted Na Yuan's bottom. 'Go outside and find your little aunt.'

Na Yuan obediently ran outside.

Shi Dan Ping pulled down his pants and urinated. Afterward he noticed Na Yuan's head poked through the bathroom door and he quickly pulled up his

pants. 'What's wrong now?'

'Little aunt asked me to tell uncle to come eat breakfast,' Na Yuan said.

Shi Dan Ping washed his hands and he followed Na Yuan to the dining room. The little rabbit already set the dining table for everyone to eat breakfast.

Na Yuan started eating after he saw uncle and his little aunt picked up their spoons. Na Yuan gobbled a spoonful of congee. Then he remembered what he wanted to tell his little aunt. 'Little aunt, uncle's pee pee bird is very big!'

The spoon in Na Na's hand dropped onto the dining table.

Shi Dan Ping choked on an egg and he coughed loudly.

End of Chapter Twenty-Seven

Related

Twenty-Eight

Chapter Twenty-Eight

Na Na was bewildered by the rare sight of Shi Dan Ping's pink cheeks. She didn't know if his cheeks were pink from coughing or if he was embarrassed. Her eyes reflexively looked down to assess if little Yuan's praise of Shi Dan Ping's bird was true.

Shi Dan Ping struggled to swallow the egg he choked on. When he lifted his head he noticed the little rabbit was staring down between his pants. His body tensed and he closed his legs.

Na Na didn't know why her train of thoughts were focused on little Yuan's praise. She never thought the tall lean Dr Shi's bird was very big. But she couldn't examine the size of his bird to confirm if it was true so she reasoned perhaps a young child's way of sizing things was more generous than reality.

Shi Dan Ping wasn't going to boast about Na Yuan's honest depiction of the size of his manliness, but he was unhappy the little rabbit looked down between his legs suspiciously like she suspected the quality of his manliness. 'Do you want me to take off my pants so you can thoroughly examine me?'

Na Na's face turned bright pink like a cooked prawn. She stood, bowed her head and she stammered. 'I... I'm going to the kitchen... I'll scoop more congee.'

Shi Dan Ping was satisfied the little rabbit was embarrassed instead of suspicious. He put down his spoon and he stood to follow the little rabbit into the kitchen.

Na Yuan opened his mouth that was stained with congee and he voiced his curiosity. 'Uncle, you and little aunt are acting strange.'

'Little meatball, make sure you eat your egg,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Yuan lowered his head and he reluctantly ate his enemy, the egg.

Na Na hid in the kitchen because she was too embarrassed to face Shi Dan Ping all because of little Yuan's nonsense talk. Her face grew hotter when she heard the familiar footsteps of Shi Dan Ping. She quickly grabbed a ladle and she

pretended to taste the congee to see if it needed more seasoning.

Shi Dan Ping slowly approached the little rabbit. He stood with his chest pressed against the little rabbit's back. His long arms reached for the jar of sugar on the kitchen bench and he whispered into the little rabbit's ear. 'I like congee to be a bit sweet.'

Shi Dan Ping's warm masculine breath exhaled gently on Na Na's sensitive earlobe and it nearly made her heart pound to the point of collapse. She lowered her shy head into the pot of congee, the steam made her face felt boiled. She lifted her head and she laughed awkwardly. 'Is that so? Little Yuan likes to eat congee that's a bit sweet too. Hehe... I'll add more sugar. I don't know if you'll like it.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't say a word whilst the little rabbit added sugar to the pot of congee. He patiently waited for the little rabbit to look at him.

Na Na knew she couldn't avoid looking at Shi Dan Ping forever. She glanced quickly at him and he laughed softly.

Shi Dan Ping rested his chin on the little rabbit's shoulder and he hugged the little rabbit from behind. He lifted her right hand that was holding a ladle closer to his mouth. He blew on the ladle to cool the hot congee and he tasted a bit of the congee.

Na Na felt the ladle weighed a thousand kilograms. If Shi Dan Ping wasn't holding her right hand, she knew she would have dropped the ladle on the kitchen floor. She bravely tilted her head up to face him and she spoke softly. 'How's the taste?'

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit's face was bright pink. He laughed an evil laugh. He put the ladle inside the pot of congee. 'You want to know? Taste it yourself and you'll know.'

'Oh-' Na Na said and the rest of her words were swallowed by Shi Dan Ping's mouth.

Shi Dan Ping didn't say anything. He kissed the little rabbit's soft lips that tasted like sweet peaches. His hands caressed the little rabbit's soft small waist.

Shi Dan Ping turned the little rabbit around and he pulled the little rabbit into

his chest. His hands held her soft neck and he used his tongue to pry open her soft lips. She parted her teeth and his tongue caressed her sweet tongue. He clutched her neck so her tongue couldn't evade his tongue and he kissed her deeper.

Na Na's whole body was limp and she let Shi Dan Ping's tongue invade her mouth. She felt his breath surrounded her body, his tongue continuously caressed her tongue and their tongues exchanged saliva.

Na Na was immersed in Shi Dan Ping's kiss. Her limp legs couldn't support her body upright. If he didn't hold her body tight against his chest then her body would collapse on the kitchen floor.

Shi Dan Ping didn't want to frighten the little rabbit. He stopped kissing and biting the little rabbit's soft lips, although his heart wanted him to devour the little rabbit. He reluctantly inched back from the little rabbit, but he couldn't resist licking her lips and he felt both their heavy breathing.

Shi Dan Ping regretted releasing the little rabbit's shiny soft swollen lips. He suppressed his urge to devour the little rabbit. 'How's the taste?'

Shi Dan Ping's husky voice prompted Na Na to absorb the memory of the kiss they shared. Her face flushed bright red and she avoided looking at his eyes. 'I... I don't know... if you think it tastes good then it's ok.'

Shi Dan Ping licked his lips. 'It's the right taste.'

Na Na was too embarrassed, she didn't know what to do with her arms and legs. Her arms and legs slowly cooperated for her to turn around so her back faced Shi Dan Ping. She pretended nothing happened. 'I'll scoop you a bowl of the sweetened congee... hurry up and eat it or you'll be late for work.'

Na Na lowered her head into the pot of congee and her shaky hand struggled to hold the ladle and scoop a bowl of congee.

Shi Dan Ping didn't want to tease the little rabbit into a corner so he generously let the little rabbit off the hook. He accepted the bowl of congee from the little rabbit and he walked to the dining table.

Na Yuan struggled a lot to eat a whole egg. He was wiping his fingers with a tissue when he saw uncle walked toward the dining table. His little aunt slowly

walked behind uncle and her cheeks were pink as if she and uncle secretly did something in the kitchen. 'Little aunt, did you and uncle eat junk food in the kitchen?'

Shi Dan Ping laughed. He sat comfortably in a chair and he slowly ate the sweetened bowl of congee scoop by scoop.

Na Na gritted her teeth. She sat her tensed body on a chair and forced herself to eat a spoonful of congee that was too sweet. In that moment she didn't feel her nephew was as sweet as the congee. 'Little boys shouldn't talk nonsense. Hurry up and finish your breakfast.'

After breakfast, Shi Dan Ping walked to work in a good mood. When he arrived at his office, he saw his little sister waited outside his office door and because he was in a good mood he chatted happily with his little sister.

Shi Dan An wasn't used to seeing her big brother look happy. 'Dearest big brother, this is a hospital. I'm begging you one hundred thousand times, stop smiling in such a shady way.'

Shi Dan Ping licked his lips, he could still taste the little rabbit's sweetness. He struggled to stop smiling. He spoke calmly. 'Little sister, why did you come here?'

'What else? I asked Tu Zhu about enrolling a little boy. He said you can take the little boy to the childcare. If you're satisfied with the childcare then childcare will enrol the little boy,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he waved his hand as a signal for his little sister to leave.

'Why are you chasing me away quickly? Even though there's no need to be courteous between siblings but big brother, you should at least thank your little sister,' Shi Dan An said.

'My dearest little sister, you shouldn't stop taking your medication. The condition of your mouth is poorer,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An suppressed her verbal attacks. Who was the one who was sick? Who was the one smiling like a fresh spring forlorn lovesick fool?

Shi Dan An sighed. She was used to losing the battle of words against her big

brother. 'Big brother, remember you owe me a favour. Pretend you don't know anything about my business and don't lecture me, ok? I have work to do. Bye.'

Shi Dan Ping laughed and he pretended he didn't hear his little sister's plea.

In the morning Shi Dan Ping had one scheduled surgery, which he finished just passed eleven in the morning. He called home and he informed Na Na that he was free to eat lunch at home with her and Na Yuan.

Shi Dan Ping was excited to see what dishes Na Na would cook for lunch. He grabbed a towel and he walked to the change room to shower. Whilst he showered, he regretted he couldn't sing in the shower to express the wonderful feeling in his heart.

After Shi Dan Ping showered and put on clothes, he walked outside the change room and his co-workers nearly fainted from the scary sight of him being happy.

It was rare for Shi Dan Ping not to have a surgery scheduled in the afternoon, he just needed to hand in a medical report and he could go home and be with Na Na and Na Yuan.

When Shi Dan Ping arrived home, he happily ate lunch with Na Na and Na Yuan. After lunch he took Na Na and Na Yuan to the hospital's childcare.

Since Tu Zhu helped prepared the paperwork for Na Yuan before Shi Dan Ping arrived with Na Na and Na Yuan, the interview went smoothly and Na Yuan was enrolled at the hospital's childcare.

Na Na was in high spirits, she couldn't believe the process of enrolling little Yuan was so smooth. She was grateful to Shi Dan Ping to the point she nearly worshiped him. She bowed and thanked Shi Dan Ping. 'Thank you Doctor Shi, you're impressive. If it won't for you, I wouldn't know what to do about little Yuan's childcare situation.'

Shi Dan Ping happily accepted the little rabbit's praises. He felt it was a wonderful feeling from head to toe to have the little rabbit need him.

Shi Dan Ping wrapped an arm around Na Yuan's shoulder and he held Na Na's hand with his free hand. 'Let's go buy seafood for dinner.'

Na Na was immersed in happiness, she didn't realised she was holding Shi Dan

Ping’s hand whilst they walked outside the hospital. She nodded her head and she smiled brightly. ‘Buying fresh seafood is good. I can also use some of the seafood to make seafood congee for breakfast tomorrow morning to celebrate little Yuan’s first day at his new childcare.’

End of Chapter Twenty-Eight

Related

Twenty-Nine

Chapter Twenty-Nine

Shi Dan Ping carried Na Yuan with one arm and he held the bags of seafood with his free hand all the way home from the seafood market. When they arrived home he gave the bags of seafood to the little rabbit and he tossed the heavy little meatball on the sofa and he massaged his sore arm. 'Tomorrow you're going to childcare, make sure you exercise. Otherwise if you stay home and just know how to eat, soon you'll turn into a little round balloon.'

Na Yuan wiggled his chubby bottom in uncle's direction. He hopped off the sofa and he ran into the kitchen. 'Little aunt, I want to see the lobsters.'

In the living room Shi Dan Ping gritted his teeth and massaged his sore arm at the same time. He couldn't believe the little meatball dared to wiggle a chubby bottom in his face!

In the kitchen Na Yuan was in awe of the lobsters swimming around a large bucket of water on the kitchen floor. He sat in front of the large bucket, poked his finger in the water and he laughed happily.

Na Na was making seafood stock and prepping vegetables for dinner. She heard little Yuan chatted to the lobsters and the soft splashes of water. She was worried the lobsters' claws would snip little Yuan's fingers so she took out a small lobster and she stunned the small lobster's head with the back of a knife. She put the dead small lobster in a bowl of water and she gave it to little Yuan to play with.

Na Yuan saw how easy it was for his little aunt to take out a small lobster for him to play with and it gave him courage to play with the livelier lobsters in the bucket of water.

'Ah!' Na Yuan cried out.

Na Na was startled and she rushed to little Yuan. 'What happened?'

Shi Dan Ping heard the little meatball cried out and he rushed to the kitchen. 'What happened?'

Na Yuan waved his little chubby finger that had a small lobster dangled on the end. He tried to shake the small lobster off his finger but it wouldn't let go of its claw and he cried pitifully.

Shi Dan Ping firmly held the little meatball's wrist and he wanted to pull the daring small lobster off the little meatball's finger, but the little rabbit stopped him and he let go of the little meatball's wrist.

'Don't pull the lobster off, little Yuan will be hurt,' Na Na said.

Na Na held little Yuan's wrist and she dipped his hand into the bucket. The small lobster released its claw from his finger and the small lobster swam around the bucket with its friends who shared the same fate to be on the dinner menu together.

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little meatball up and he hugged the little meatball.

Na Yuan cried on uncle's shoulder and he waved his swollen finger in his little aunt's direction. 'Little aunt, my finger hurts.'

Na Na quickly dried her hands with a towel and she walked toward little Yuan. She blew on little Yuan's swollen finger. 'Be good, don't cry.'

Shi Dan Ping felt that warm feeling sneaked into his heart again. He felt like the little rabbit, the little meatball and him were a happy family of three.

'Do you have disinfectant at home?' Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping turned around to carry the little meatball to his room. 'Na Na, you can finish cooking dinner. I'll take care of little Yuan's finger.'

Shi Dan Ping and Na Yuan's stomachs rumbled at the same time.

Na Na gently patted little Yuan's bottom. 'Don't cry. Uncle will take good care of your finger and it won't hurt anymore. I'll marinate and steam all these bad lobsters and later you can swallow them into your stomach, ok?'

Na Yuan sniffed his runny nose and he nodded his head. 'Yes, little aunt.'

Inside Shi Dan Ping's room, he gently put the little Yuan onto the bed. He took out the first aid kit from a bathroom cabinet. He opened the kit, he took out a disinfectant bottle, band aids and cotton swabs. He turned on the bathroom sink faucet and wet some of the tips of the cotton swabs. He turned off the faucet

and he carried the disinfectant bottle, band aids and cotton swabs back to his room.

Shi Dan Ping carefully used a wet cotton swap tip to clean the little meatball's finger, he applied disinfectant and he wrapped a band aid around the little meatball's finger. 'Little Yuan, your finger wasn't bleeding but you cried enthusiastically.'

'Uncle, it hurts, really hurts,' Na Yuan protested softly.

Shi Dan Ping threw the used items in a rubbish bin and he put the disinfectant on top of the desk. 'It hurts? Do you want to call yourself a young man? It was a little snip but you cried so loudly. Will crying stop the pain?'

Na Yuan bowed his head and he kept quiet.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. Like a magician he conjured a new unwrapped lollipop under the little meatball's chin. 'Hurry up and eat it. Otherwise your little aunt will see it, she'll take it away and you can't eat it.'

Na Yuan lifted his head, his eyes widened and he put uncle's magical lollipop in his mouth. 'Uncle, you're a really good uncle!'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed and he gently knocked the little meatball's head. 'Little rascal!'

Na Yuan happily sucked on the lollipop, rolled around on the bed and he forgot about his finger.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little meatball happily rolling on the bed and his eyes lit up.

Shi Dan Ping sat on the bed and he smiled too brightly. He was like a wolf who enlisted an innocent baby rabbit to be his accomplice. 'Little Yuan, is uncle's bed comfortable?'

Na Yuan nodded his head and there was anticipation in his round eyes. 'Uncle, can I sleep on your giant bed with you tonight?'

Shi Dan Ping's achieved his first goal. He nodded his head and he pretended to reluctantly agree. 'Ok...'

Na Yuan cheered and he hugged uncle's neck.

Shi Dan Ping rubbed the little meatball's head. 'If uncle's giant bed is soft and comfortable, should we let your little aunt enjoy it too? Because good young children should know how to share.'

Shi Dan Ping felt no shame using a young child to achieve his priority goal.

Although Na Yuan was energetic and curious, he was a good and an obedient young child. 'Uncle, you're right. I want to share with little aunt too. Uncle, let's ask little aunt to sleep together on your bed.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head and he generously massaged the little meatball's chubby arms.

In the kitchen Na Na was worried little Yuan was too young to eat spicy food. Instead of making spicy seafood dishes, she marinated the seafood with salt, pepper and sugar before she steamed it. She made a vinaigrette salad to accompany the seafood and she steamed vegetables too.

Na Na put the cooked seafood dishes, salad and vegetables on the dining table. Shi Dan Ping and Na Yuan excitedly gobbled their delicious dinner.

After dinner all the food on the plates were emptied into satisfied bellies. Na Na cleaned and tidied the kitchen whilst Shi Dan Ping bathed Na Yuan.

Na Na comfortably washed dishes and she thought about what nutritious food she should cook for little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping in the morning.

When Na Na finished cleaning and tidying the kitchen, she looked at the clock on the wall and she saw it was little Yuan's bedtime. She washed and wiped her hands. Then she walked to Shi Dan Ping's room and knocked on the door.

Na Na opened the unlocked door. Inside the room she saw little Yuan rested his head on Shi Dan Ping's shoulder. Little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping were chatting and laughing happily together.

Na Yuan heard the door opened and he waved his hand at his little aunt. 'Little aunt, quickly come lay down here together with us. I waited a long time for little aunt.'

Na Na's body tensed and she laughed awkwardly. 'Little Yuan, don't cause trouble. Uncle had a tiring work day. Let's go back to our rooms. You should let

uncle have a peaceful rest.'

'Uncle's bed is big and comfortable. I want to sleep here with little aunt and uncle,' Na Yuan pleaded.

Na Na was embarrassed and she didn't dare look at Shi Dan Ping. 'Little Yuan, be good and listen to me. Go back to your room and sleep.'

Na Yuan pouted his lips. 'Uncle agreed to let little aunt and me to sleep here together. It's been a long time since I got to sleep together with daddy and mummy. Why is it I can't sleep together with little aunt and uncle either?'

Na Na thought about how little Yuan slept on his own for the past year. Little Yuan didn't have anyone to read him bedtime stories or comfort him in the middle of the night if he had a nightmare. Even the rare nights she could sleep with little Yuan, he clutched her shirt, he was restless and cried out in his sleep.

Na Na remembered that warm morning little Yuan slept peacefully on Shi Dan Ping's chest. She knew even if she did many things for little Yuan there were some things she couldn't compensate for little Yuan who missed his parents, like a father figure for him to look up to and to make him feel safe. In the past little Yuan looked up to Na Hao. Since Na Hao couldn't be with little Yuan, little Yuan looked up to and he felt safe with Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na's heart ached and she couldn't refuse little Yuan's request. She reasoned she slept on the same bed with Shi Dan Ping before and with little Yuan between her and Shi Dan Ping, she didn't think anything unexpected could happen.

Na Na's cheeks blushed pink and she looked awkwardly at Shi Dan Ping. 'Doctor Shi, you can see little Yuan doesn't understand the situation. What do you think?'

Shi Dan Ping pretended he didn't care, he crossed his arms and he spoke calmly. 'Yes, we can sleep together. You just need to control yourself and keep your hands off me and it'll be ok.'

Na Na was speechless. Who was the helpless one? Who was the one who couldn't control their urges and keep their hands to themselves? Of course she could control herself and keep her hands off Shi Dan Ping!

Na Na forced a smile and she regretted she couldn't spit on Shi Dan Ping's face. Her embarrassment turned to anger. She glared at Shi Dan Ping and she left the room to go shower in the guest bathroom.

The moment the door closed the little meatball laughed happily. Shi Dan Ping gently flicked the little meatball's forehead.

Na Yuan stuck out his tongue and he spoke softly. 'Uncle, I know the truth. Uncle, you really want to sleep together with little aunt too, right?'

Shi Dan Ping smiled and he couldn't resist squeezing the little meatball's chubby cheeks.

End of Chapter Twenty-Nine

Related

Thirty

Chapter Thirty

Last time Na Na slept in the same bed as Shi Dan Ping, she was drunk. She felt sleeping in the same bed with him when she was sober was a different situation. It made her nervous and there was a small part of her that was anticipating what was going to happen during the night. That small anticipation was like how she felt on her first day of college. She wanted to style her hair and wear a new outfit to leave a good impression on her new classmates.

Na Na showered for a long time. She carefully washed her hair and scrubbed her skin from head to toe. After her shower she dressed and she sat on the toilet seat to trim her fingernails and toenails.

Na Na wore flannel pyjamas to cover herself from her neck to her ankles. She looked like a young high school student.

Shi Dan Ping waited a long time for Na Na to finish showering. When he heard her knocked on his door his drowsiness disappeared and he rubbed his face to be alert. 'Come in.'

Na Na buried her chin on the pillow she hugged and she slowly walked into the room.

Shi Dan Ping swallowed his saliva. The little rabbit looked soft and tender, she smelt fresh and tasty and his mouth watered.

Under the romantic soft lighting, Na Na inched toward the bed and Shi Dan Ping sat stiffly against the bedhead. His and her body temperatures rose as they anticipated the moment they'd lay next to each other.

Na Yuan was sleepy long ago. He heard the door opened, but he was too sleepy to sit up. 'Little aunt, hug me.'

Shi Dan Ping was speechless. The little meatball ruined the romantic atmosphere. He hugged the little meatball who wanted the little rabbit's affections.

Na Na just stood at the front of Shi Dan Ping's bed, because she was too shy to

lay down on the bed.

Na Yuan moved his chubby bottom to a comfortable spot on uncle's chest. 'Little aunt, pat pat.'

Na Na's embarrassment melted. She laughed, she put the pillow she held on the bed and she laid next to little Yuan. She pulled little Yuan closer and she patted his back to lull him to sleep.

Na Yuan found a comfortable spot on his little aunt's chest, he closed his eyes and fell asleep.

Shi Dan Ping was jealous of the little meatball who got to sleep on the little rabbit's chest. 'He's this big and he still wants someone to rock him to sleep. He's a little girl, not a man.'

Na Na lifted her head and she spoke softly. 'He's only five years old. How can he be a man?'

Shi Dan Ping's logic was clouded by jealousy and he glared at the little meatball's back. 'Living for five years is a long time already. How can he not be a man?'

Shi Dan Ping realised he sounded unreasonable. He wanted to relax the tensed atmosphere, but before he could say anything the little meatball was snoring happily. He thought the little meatball looked like an adorable piglet who snorted bubbles in their sleep. But it was the little rabbit he wanted to sleep with. He didn't want the little meatball to be sleeping on the little rabbit's chest.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't believe the little meatball dared to be a barrier that separated him and the little rabbit. He wanted to squeeze the little meatball's cheeks to wake up the little meatball.

Na Na was oblivious to Shi Dan Ping's jealousy. She gently covered the bedsheet over little Yuan, she kissed little Yuan's cheeks and she laid straight on her back to sleep.

Shi Dan Ping was disappointed the little rabbit was just going to sleep. He tossed and turned on his side of the bed.

Na Na heard the rustle of Shi Dan Ping's movements on the bed. She turned on

her side to face him.

Shi Dan Ping smiled and he coughed to clear his dry throat. 'Are you just going to sleep like this?'

Na Na didn't understand what Shi Dan Ping meant. 'Mmm... good night?'

Shi Dan Ping felt talking to the little rabbit was like talking into an ox's ear. He calmed his heart's protests – 'Save good night for your nephew! Who's waiting for you to say good night? Can you not read the mood? Even the little meatball received good night kisses from you!'

Shi Dan Ping silently rolled over. His back faced the little rabbit and he bit his pillow.

Na Na yawned. 'Let's sleep early. Tomorrow morning we need to go to work.'

The bed was spacious and comfortable but Shi Dan Ping felt his side of the bed was cold and lonely. He rolled over to face the little rabbit. The little rabbit and the little meatball were sleeping peacefully together and he felt like an outsider.

Shi Dan Ping felt the night wasn't supposed to pass in that manner. He carefully pulled the little meatball over his side of the bed. Then he carefully moved to sleep next to the little rabbit and he slid his arm under her neck. He pulled the little rabbit closer and he hugged her to sleep. He still wasn't satisfied, he draped her leg over his waist and he wrapped her arm on his back. He carefully lifted her neck to lay her head on his chest. Finally he was satisfied, the night was supposed to pass with him and the little rabbit hugging each other to sleep.

The following morning the abandoned Na Yuan was the first one to wake up. He was upset his little aunt hugged uncle all night and she left him to sleep by himself on the other side of the bed. His little aunt used to hug him to sleep!

The abandoned Na Yuan stood on the bed and he pressed his foot on uncle's back.

Shi Dan Ping felt a pressure on his back and he stirred in his sleep.

Na Na felt someone moving on the bed and she was startled awake. She opened her eyes and her nose was pressed against Shi Dan Ping's nose.

Shi Dan Ping was woken up by the sound of someone who gasped loudly. He opened his eyes and he saw the little rabbit's face was flushed pink and her eyes were watery early in the morning. He was happy he got to hug the little rabbit to sleep and the little rabbit was the first person he saw when he woke up.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't resist inching his lips closer to the little rabbit's lips...

'Ah!' Na Na cried out.

Shi Dan Ping closed his eyes and he gritted his teeth. 'Be quiet.'

Na Na woke up and she cried out because she was shocked she hugged Shi Dan Ping in her sleep. She retrieved her arm that was wrapped around his back and she lifted her leg to sit up but her leg accidentally kicked his back.

The little rabbit accidentally kicked his back but the little meatball purposely kicked his bottom. He sat up and he squeezed the little meatball's bottom.

'Ah! Uncle is bad! You're not allowed to hog little aunt,' Na Yuan said.

Shi Dan Ping rubbed his face and he felt something wet on his face and palm.

'Uncle, you're bleeding!' Na Yuan cried out.

Shi Dan Ping glared at the aunt and nephew pair. He gritted his teeth and he thought he definitely owed the aunt and nephew pair in a previous life and that was why he was tortured by them early in the morning.

Shi Dan Ping grabbed some tissues and he wiped his nose but his nose wasn't bleeding. He turned to look at the little rabbit who was speechless.

Na Na covered the bedsheet up to her neck. She looked like a little girl who was captured by a villain. 'I'm really sorry... I... I'll definitely take... take the bedspread off the bed and I'll wash and clean it properly.'

Shi Dan Ping was confused, he didn't understand what Na Na meant.

Na Na winced and she pressed her thighs together. 'I... my... has come.'

Shi Dan Ping understood why his nose wasn't bleeding... indeed last night wasn't a suitable night for anything to happen.

Na Na felt her face was burnt like fire. She was embarrassed to death. She didn't expect the first time she slept on Shi Dan Ping's bed, she'd stain blood on

his snow white bedspread.

Na Na hated her period. It always arrived without warning, no sharp lower back pain or bloated stomach. Instead it arrived on a whim and gave her pain after arrival.

Na Na's stomach hurt. She winced and she was anxious too. She was anxious Shi Dan Ping was a scary clean freak.

Shi Dan Ping quietly wiped the blood off his face. He stared in disbelief at the blood on the tissue he held. He couldn't believe nothing happened last night, but why did things turn tragic in the morning?

End of Chapter Thirty

Related

Thirty-One

Chapter Thirty-One

Na Yuan looked at uncle and his little aunt, he didn't understand what happened. 'Little aunt, I want to pee pee.'

Na Na's eyes pleaded silently for Shi Dan Ping's help.

Shi Dan Ping sighed and he lifted the little meatball to carry the little meatball to the bathroom.

Na Yuan kicked his legs in the air and he wanted his little aunt. 'I don't need uncle. I want little aunt.'

Shi Dan Ping gently slapped the little meatball's bottom. 'Don't you know exposing yourself in front of a girl is uncivilised?'

Na Na was speechless.

Na Yuan didn't understand uncle's deep words, but he stopped kicking.

'Doctor Shi... little Yuan is still young. Don't... teach him bad-' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping didn't turn his head around and he continued to carry the little meatball to the bathroom. 'Need to discipline while they're still young.'

Na Na heard the bathroom door closed. She got out of bed and she saw bright red blood on the bedspread.

Na Na folded the bedsheet and put it on the floor. Then she untucked the bedspread and took it to her room before she went to the guest bathroom.

Na Na washed, brushed and changed into clean clothes. She walked out of the bathroom and she saw Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan washed their faces and changed their clothes too.

Shi Dan Ping passed the little meatball's school bag he packed to the little rabbit. 'Today we're taking little Yuan to childcare. We'll need to sign some extra forms for him. There's no time to cook breakfast, we'll eat breakfast nearby.'

Na Na nodded her head. She squatted and helped little Yuan put on his shoes.

Shi Dan Ping quietly watched the little rabbit carefully checked the little meatball's outfit. He coughed awkwardly. 'After work, wait for me to go to the shops together. We need to buy many new things for home... like bedspreads... coincidentally the bedspreads at home are dirty. We shouldn't waste water, we should get rid of it and buy new ones.'

Na Na lifted her head and she saw Shi Dan Ping looked unnaturally gentle.

Shi Dan Ping frowned. He glared at the little rabbit and he pretended he lost his patience. 'What are you in a daze for? Hurry up, let's go or the hospital will deduct your pay for being late.'

Na Na smiled brightly. 'Doctor Shi...' She stood and she held little Yuan's hand. 'What do you want to eat for lunch and dinner today? I'll make it for you.'

Na Na wasn't a genius, but she didn't need to be a genius to feel another person's sincerity. Sometimes Shi Dan Ping said cruel things, he was petty even toward young children and he rarely spoke civilly to her... since their first meeting, she thought he saw her as an eyesore but she realised it wasn't like that.

Although Shi Dan Ping held grudges and he caused trouble for Na Na, but after the night she was drunk, the person who helped her the most was Shi Dan Ping. At work he pretended he was picking on her, but he didn't give her heavy work duties and he didn't like seeing her overworked.

When Na Na struggled and felt she was at a dead end, Shi Dan Ping brought her and little Yuan into his home. She knew Shi Dan Ping was easily annoyed by noisy young children, but he patiently lulled little Yuan to sleep. Shi Dan Ping could intimidate young children to the point they'd cry loudly, but she understood behind Shi Dan Ping's coldness was a gentle heart.

Na Na was grateful toward Shi Dan Ping, but she didn't know how to repay his generosity and kindness. It was easy to just say thank you, she felt it wasn't meaningful enough. She felt she was too useless, she couldn't help Shi Dan Ping. She could only repay him in her own small ways to repay some of his generosity and kindness.

Shi Dan Ping was oblivious to Na Na's thoughts. A morning of blood put him in a bad mood.

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na dropped Na Yuan off at the childcare and they took the elevator to their staff room. The moment they stepped into the elevator, he heard a few nurses gossiped about Wei Zhexue.

The elevator door opened and Shi Dan Ping's bad mood plummet to the bottom, because Wei Zhexue was smiling too warmly in the little rabbit's direction.

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly when he saw the nurses surrounded Wei Zhexue and they were under Wei Zhexue's spell.

Na Na followed Shi Dan Ping's gaze and she saw Wei Zhexue. 'Wei Zhexue!'

Wei Zhexue politely greeted the nurses who surround him and he walked toward Na Na. 'Na Na!' His smile stiffened when he saw Shi Dan Ping was glaring at him by Na Na's side. 'Little Ping, you're here early this morning too.'

'Wei Zhexue, are you looking for me to help you with something?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue shook his head. 'What happened? Before you said you'll come find me to ask me to help you with something. I waited a few days for you, but I didn't hear anything from you.'

Na Na finally remembered a few days ago she did wanted to ask Wei Zhexue for help, but she was busy moving into Shi Dan Ping's home and she forgot to explain to Wei Zhexue.

Na Na rubbed her head and she apologised. 'I'm really sorry, I forgot.'

'It's nothing. Was your problem solved?' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na nodded her head. She glanced at Shi Dan Ping, she smiled and she looked back at Wei Zhexue. 'It's solved. Thank you Wei Zhexue.'

Shi Dan Ping glared coldly at Wei Zhexue who chatted happily with the little rabbit. Shi Dan Ping couldn't believe the little rabbit only said a few words with Wei Zhexue and already she didn't know which direction was east, west, south or north! Shi Dan Ping couldn't stand how the little rabbit acted shy around Wei Zhexue.

Na Na heard Shi Dan Ping's abrupt laugh and she felt goose bumps rose on her

skin.

Shi Dan Ping ignored Wei Zhexue. Shi Dan Ping turned to the little rabbit and he spoke in a gentle tone of voice. 'I have a morning surgery scheduled. It'll likely be a long surgery. After work, wait for me and we'll go to the childcare together to pick up the little one.'

Na Na was perplexed, she couldn't believe it was Shi Dan Ping who spoke.

Shi Dan Ping was like a husband who was married for many years who only had eyes for his wife, he stroked the little rabbit's hair.

Na Na was shocked and she stood motionless.

Wei Zhexue laughed and he broke the tender moment between Shi Dan Ping and Na Na.

Shi Dan Ping looked triumphantly at Wei Zhexue, he put his hands in his pockets and he walked toward his office.

Na Na was too embarrassed and she didn't know what to say. 'Wei Zhexue, I-'

'It's nothing. I believe you don't have that intent... Doctor Shi isn't bad, he's just hard to handle. It'll be tough for you and little Yuan,' Wei Zhexue said.

Wei Zhexue wasn't a fool. He didn't need to think too much to guess what happened. He didn't ask Na Na about her family situation, but he understood she struggled to look after her nephew on her own and she was temporarily living at Shi Dan Ping's home.

Na Na exhaled gently and she looked at the clock on the wall. 'If you don't need anything, I should go to the staff room.'

Wei Zhexue swallowed what he wanted to say and he nodded his head. 'Ok, I need to start work too.'

Na Na changed into a nurse uniform and the moment she walked out of the change room she saw Shi Dan Ping was waiting outside for her. 'What's wrong?'

Shi Dan Ping was nervous and he looked at the little rabbit for a long time before he forced himself to open his mouth. 'Drink it while it's hot.'

Shi Dan Ping passed the Dewar flask in his hands to Na Na, he turned around

and he walked away stiffly.

Na Na wanted to ask Shi Dan Ping what was inside the Dewar flask but he walked off too quickly. She opened the Dewar flask, steam flowed out and the smell of a liquid remedy for period relief sweetened her heart and she laughed foolishly.

Na Na stopped laughing when she saw Liu Nan gave her a curious look. She blushed and she awkwardly greeted Liu Nan. 'Good morning head nurse Liu.'

Liu Nan sighed. 'Too bad it's not a good morning for me... I don't have a man who prepares pain relief for my period.'

'Big sister head nurse Liu, you're always teasing me. Between Doctor Shi and me, it's not like what you're thinking,' Na Na said.

Liu Nan laughed. 'Oh? You know what I'm thinking?'

Na Na's blushed brighter red. 'Doctor Shi is a good person. He's helped me a lot... he's just being kind. Please don't misunderstand.'

Liu Nan was sceptical. What good person? She'd never seen the little boy Shi Dan Ping treat another person as good as he treated Na Na. It was clear to even a person passing by to see Shi Dan Ping cared about Na Na. It was only the simpleton Na Na who didn't see clearly.

Na Na thought Liu Nan looked like Liu Nan didn't believe her and she hastily explained further. 'It's true, there's nothing between Shi Dan Ping and me... big sister, one hundred thousand times don't misunderstand. I don't want to cause more trouble for Shi Dan Ping, because I've troubled him a lot already.'

Liu Nan crossed her arms. 'Ok, you don't need to explain. Think about it, Shi Dan Ping isn't the kind of person to go out of his way to do something troublesome as preparing period pain relief in warm water and putting it in a Dewar flask to personally bring it to you.'

Na Na couldn't refute Liu Nan's logic.

Liu Nan was happy the simpleton finally understood!

During the morning staff briefing, Na Na didn't see Shi Dan Ping because he was called to perform an emergency surgery. She didn't know why she felt sad

she didn't get to see him, and a part of her suspected her heart and she panicked.

In an emergency operating room, an emergency nurse explained to Shi Dan Ping about the patient's situation. 'The patient's exact age isn't known, he's male about twenty years old. Half an hour ago he was hit by a train and there's two wounds on his head.'

'Where are the patient's MRI scans?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'The MRI scan results haven't been received,' the emergency nurse said.

'Call someone to send the MRI scans now or there's no hope left to save the patient,' Shi Dan Ping instructed.

'Can the patient still be saved?' the emergency nurse asked.

Shi Dan Ping didn't take his eyes away from examining the patient's head wounds. 'Even if the patient can't be saved, we still need to try to save the patient, because the patient's heart is still beating.'

End of Chapter Thirty-One

Related

Thirty-Two

Chapter Thirty-Two

Five hours later Shi Dan Ping came out of the operating room. He did all he could to save the patient, but he wasn't certain if the patient would regain consciousness within forty-eight hours. The hard part of his job was explaining to the patients' hopeful family members that human lives were fragile, there were no guarantees patients would fully recover from an accident or illness... the hardest duty was when he had to inform a patient's family members there was a high likelihood the patient wouldn't regain consciousness, which was the case for the young male patient he operated on in the morning.

After Shi Dan Ping showered he received a text message from Na Na. 'I waited for you to pick up little Yuan with me, but you were still in the operating room when it was time to pick up little Yuan.'

Shi Dan Ping wrote a medical report for the young male patient before he could go home. At home he saw a note from Na Na taped on his bedroom door. 'Little Yuan and I are taking a nap before dropping little Yuan off at childcare at two in the afternoon. I put your lunch in the oven.'

Shi Dan Ping washed his hands and he ate the lunch dishes Na Na made for him. The food Na Na cooked helped melt his stressful morning work day.

Shi Dan Ping washed his plates and chopsticks. He looked at the clock on the wall, it was time to wake up the little meatball for childcare. He went into the little meatball's room and it took him a while to wake up the little meatball who was still sleepy.

At two in the afternoon Shi Dan Ping and Na Na dropped Na Yuan off at childcare.

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na walked to the elevator. 'Was the morning surgery successful?'

'If the patient doesn't wake up in the next forty-eight hours, it'll be unlikely the patient will wake up later,' Shi Dan Ping said.

When Shi Dan Ping and Na Na arrived on the seventeenth floor, a nurse who was on duty informed Shi Dan Ping the young male patient was transferred to the seventeenth floor and the nurse gave Shi Dan Ping the young male patient's updated hospital record.

Shi Dan Ping didn't get a chance to give instructions to the nurse, because the young male patient's family members suddenly appeared in front of them.

'Doctor Shi, why isn't my son awake yet?' the patient's dad asked.

The patient's other family members fired questions at Shi Dan Ping continuously. 'When will he wake up... after he wakes up will he be able to walk... Doctor Shi, he will wake up, right?'

'I'm really sorry, I don't know. He suffered serious head injuries, but hopefully he'll wake up within the next forty-eight hours,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Doctor Shi... please save my son,' the patient's mum said.

'I'm really sorry everyone, Doctor Shi has other patients to see. Your family member is stable, he'll wake up. Doctor Shi is here-' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping shot a warning look at the little rabbit to stop her from giving the patient's family members false hope. But it was too late, the patient's family members sobbed joyfully and they thanked him profusely.

After the patient's family members left the hospital, Shi Dan Ping glared coldly at Na Na. She didn't know what she did to make him angry and she cautiously opened her mouth. 'Doctor Shi, why-'

Shi Dan Ping didn't stop walking until he and the little rabbit reached the staff room. He opened the patient's hospital record and he put it on a table in front of the little rabbit. 'Open your eyes and take a look at the patient's MRI scans and EEG graph.'

Na Na's shaky hands picked up the patient's MRI scans and EEG graph.

'You studied nursing for four years and you have more than a year of practical nursing experience, where did it all go? Did you feed it to a dog? Did anyone tell you, you need to use your brain before and while you speak? Do you understand trouble can come out of a careless mouth?' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na looked confusedly at Shi Dan Ping.

‘I can’t guarantee the patient can wake up! Why did you give the patient’s family false hope? If the patient doesn’t wake up in two days, the patient won’t wake up again. If that happens, how are you going to face the patient’s family?’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit’s face was bleached white. ‘If you give false hope, it can turn into despair. It’s better not to encourage hope from the start.’

‘But... they were very worried about the patient. Don’t they need some words of comfort?’ Na Na said softly.

‘Na Na... you’ve updated and read many patients’ hospital records. Haven’t you noticed a pattern? There’s a reason why it’s mandatory for medical staff to ask about a patient’s medical history, record all tests performed and keep copies of test results and medical reports. Why? Because no one can guarantee a favourable outcome and records are insurance for unfavourable outcomes. Medical staff aren’t just responsible for their actions, they’re responsible for their words too!’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Of course Na Na understood liability, not only did she checked countless patient consent forms were signed by either the patient or the patient’s next of kin, but she read the risks and benefits of each treatment.

Na Na put the patient’s MRI scans and EEG graph back inside the patient’s hospital record. ‘But... isn’t it misleading if patients and their families aren’t given direct answers?’

Shi Dan Ping sighed on the inside. ‘Na Na... it’s not misleading. Medical staff not giving exact outcome of any treatment isn’t misleading. What’s misleading is promising a patient’s condition will be stable after treatment. If you want to continue working at the hospital, you need to learn to protect yourself by being responsible for your actions and words.’

Na Na shook her head. ‘That’s avoiding responsibility.’

‘It’s taking responsibility! Taking responsibility for your words and actions, being responsible toward the patient and their family and being responsible to yourself,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Although Na Na closed her mouth, she couldn't conceal her disagreement off her face.

'When I was a new surgeon, I overestimated my surgical skills. But I remembered clearly the first time after a successful surgery a patient unexpectedly didn't wake up... I saw the despair in the eyes of patient's family and they blamed me for giving them false hope. I didn't know what to explain to them face to face, it was my supervisor who consoled them and explained to them what happened for me,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping spoke calmly but in his heart that kind of feeling of guilt couldn't be erased. 'Afterward my supervisor told me it's not a wrong ideal to save lives, but I needed to learn to be responsible for myself first otherwise I can't save lives. Na Na... if you can't guarantee your own nursing career, how will you be able to help patients?'

Na Na looked up to Florence Nightingale, she wasn't as selfless as Florence Nightingale but at least she felt she stayed true to her conscience. But Shi Dan Ping helped her understand why she was asked to do some tasks which seemed unethical, because it was necessary in order for her to continue to take care of patients.

'I... was wrong,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping's heart softened. He helped to adjust the little rabbit's nursing cap. 'No, you're right... but it's not suitable for a hospital environment. You need to learn to adapt.'

Na Na nodded her head. 'I understand... I'm really sorry. Doctor Shi, I gave you more trouble.'

Shi Dan Ping smiled warmly. 'If you know your troublesome then next time remember to bring your intelligence to work. Your brain isn't for you to use for comparing sea water, when you speak at work you need to use your brain.'

Na Na silently turned around and she started work to escape Shi Dan Ping's brutal honesty.

End of Chapter Thirty-Two

Related

Thirty-Three

Chapter Thirty-Three

Na Na and Shi Dan Ping rushed to the childcare after their work shift ended.

Shi Dan Ping frowned. He couldn't find the little meatball inside the childcare. The little meatball was a rascal, but he was a smart rascal who wouldn't leave the childcare with a stranger. 'Perhaps little Yuan's dad picked him up.'

Na Na shook her head and she panicked. She checked the childcare's log entries and she exhaled gently. 'It's ok, Wei Zhexue picked up little Yuan. Doctor Shi, can I borrow your phone to call him?'

Shi Dan Ping took out his phone. 'Read his phone number.'

Na Na read out Wei Zhexue's phone number.

Shi Dan Ping dialled Wei Zhexue's number and he heard laughter of young children on Wei Zhexue's end. 'Wei Zhexue?'

'It's me. Is Na Na with you?' Wei Zhexue said.

Shi Dan Ping looked at the little rabbit who was high on anxiety. 'Um.'

'Little Ping, can you pass the phone to Na Na? I want to speak to her,' Wei Zhexue said.

'No!' Shi Dan Ping refused.

Na Na pulled Shi Dan Ping's free arm to signal him to ask about little Yuan.

'Is Na Yuan with you?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'After work I passed by the childcare and I saw little Yuan waiting at the childcare gate. I thought Na Na was still at work, I called her but there was no answer. Little Yuan was hungry so I took him to eat,' Wei Zhexue said.

Shi Dan Ping had no patience for Wei Zhexue's flimsy excuse. 'Wei Zhexue, what are you doing worrying about my family's child?'

Na Na's worry turned to disbelief, she thought she misheard Shi Dan Ping's words.

‘If you’re too free, go to your office to report yourself,’ Shi Dan Ping said sarcastically.

Wei Zhexue wasn’t impressed with Shi Dan Ping’s ‘give an inch and take a mile’ attitude. ‘Shi Dan Ping! What are you saying? I just had good intentions-’

Shi Dan Ping laughed mockingly. ‘Good intentions or ulterior motives? Every day there are many young children who have parents picking them up late. Why is it I don’t see you have ‘good intentions’ toward them?’

Wei Zhexue surrendered. ‘Little Yuan and I are at the chicken restaurant near the hospital-’

Shi Dan Ping hung up his phone and he turned to Na Na. ‘Little Yuan and Wei Zhexue are at the chicken restaurant. Let’s go escort little Yuan home.’

Na Na’s heart relaxed. ‘It’s a good thing there’s Wei Zhexue-’

Na Na saw Shi Dan Ping gave her a look colder than the snow on the highest mountain and she swallowed the rest of her words.

Na Na’s limp legs took two steps back. ‘What is it?’

Shi Dan Ping laughed an evil laugh, he took two steps toward the little rabbit and he held her wrist. ‘It’s good. Let’s go.’

Na Na couldn’t pull her wrist out of Shi Dan Ping’s grip. Her cheeks blushed pink, she lowered her head and she followed him to the chicken restaurant.

Na Na’s heart pounded and she was scared Shi Dan Ping’s wide palm could feel her pulse raced. She remembered it was the same palm that gave her the Dewar flask in the morning and it calmed her heart a bit.

Na Na lifted her head to look up at Shi Dan Ping and she thought if she could hold his hand for the rest of her life... she wouldn’t be scared to face difficult situations and she wouldn’t feel lost in a cold bleakness.

Na Na lowered her head and she looked at Shi Dan Ping’s hand. It held her wrist tightly, she clearly saw his green veins, it gave her a sense of reassurance and security as if it would never let go.

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na arrived at the chicken restaurant. Shi Dan Ping frowned and he navigated through the noisy children who ran around the

chicken restaurant. He saw the little meatball sat at a table upstairs next to a window.

Although Na Na knew little Yuan was with Wei Zhexue but the moment she saw little Yuan with her own eyes, her last shred of anxiety melted. 'Little Yuan!'

Na Yuan was eating a chicken leg when he heard his little aunt's voice. He lifted his head and he laughed happily. 'Little aunt! Come here quickly, uncle Wei bought a lot of delicious food.'

Wei Zhexue laughed and he rubbed Na Yuan's head. Wei Zhexue looked at Na Na's direction and his laughter stopped. He saw Shi Dan Ping's hand was holding Na Na's hand tightly. 'Na Na, little Ping, did both of you eat dinner yet? If not, come here quickly and eat, there's plenty of food.'

Na Na was in the mood for chicken and she nodded her head. She was about to walk upstairs, but she heard Shi Dan Ping scoffed and she felt something pulled her hand back. The something was Shi Dan Ping's hand that moved from her wrist to interlock with her fingers, he held her hand tightly.

Shi Dan Ping held the little rabbit's hand and he led her upstairs. At Wei Zhexue and the little meatball's table, Shi Dan Ping glanced at the food on the table. 'Wei Zhexue, are you feeding my family's child these kind of food for him to contract the bird flu?'

Na Yuan lost his appetite and he struggled to swallow the delicious chicken in his mouth. He scrunched his face. 'Uncle is bad! Uncle is really hateful!'

Shi Dan Ping's free hand was itchy, he wanted to squeeze the stinky little meatball's cheeks to death! He couldn't believe the little meatball dared to call him bad but called uncle Wei sweetly. That little meatball was a little wolf without a conscience! The little meatball was easily bribed by unsanitary junk food and dared to side with an outsider.

Na Yuan wiped his greasy chubby hands with a tissue and he told his little aunt the good news. 'Little aunt, uncle Wei is good. Uncle Wei promised on the weekend he'll take me on a snow trip.'

Na Na knew little Yuan loved to ski. Na Hao used to take little Yuan on snow trips on the weekend to ski.

Na Na wiped little Yuan's mouth. She turned to face Wei Zhexue and she apologised. 'I'm sorry, little Yuan inconvenienced you. I hope he wasn't too much of a nuisance.'

Wei Zhexue laughed. 'Not at all. I really like little Yuan. He's a loveable good precious darling. How can he be a nuisance?'

Na Yuan nodded his head and he spoke sternly. 'Little aunt, you lied. I didn't cause uncle Wei any trouble. I did listen to uncle Wei. Uncle Wei thinks I'm a loveable child and he wanted to take me here to eat dinner.'

Wei Zhexue squeezed Na Yuan's nose. 'Yes, this precious darling child is the most loveable!'

Shi Dan Ping heart was full of cold anger. That little meatball the betrayer! He wasn't going to take the little meatball to pee pee anymore! The little meatball shouldn't dream about ever laying on his bed again!

Wei Zhexue passed a drink to Na Na. 'Na Na, you should come with us too. It's safer with you there, more eyes on little Yuan to keep him safe. This weekend let's go together to take little Yuan to play in the snow.'

Na Na felt little Yuan missed out on many things and she didn't want little Yuan to always be cooped up at home in his bedroom... she turned to face Shi Dan Ping and she gaged his mood.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit was looking at him and his anger melted. He laughed gently. 'What is it? You want me to come too?'

'Uh, no-' Na Na said.

'Of course you want me to come with you. I'm free this weekend. Let's bring little Yuan to play in the snow and it's good to train him while he's young.'

Shi Dan Ping turned to face the little meatball and he sighed tragically. 'If you keep eating like this and don't exercise... you'll die too quickly.'

Na Na and Na Yuan were a speechless pair of a little aunt and nephew.

Na Yuan tossed the chicken leg he held onto his plate. 'Little aunt, why aren't we living together at uncle Wei's home? The bad uncle is too hateful.'

Na Na's heart pounded fearfully, it was too late to cover little Yuan's careless

mouth.

‘Because your little aunt slept in my bed already,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Wei Zhexue’s hand trembled and the glass of coke he held tipped onto the table and bubbled. He forced himself to smile whilst he cleaned the table and his eyes fiercely met Shi Dan Ping’s triumphant eyes.

End of Chapter Thirty-Three

Related

part 1

Chapter Thirty-Four (Part 1)

Neither Wei Zhexue nor Shi Dan Ping wanted to back down. Their intense glares made Na Na feel the whole day was unlucky. She blamed the unlucky day started since the arrival of her step-aunt.

Na Yuan blinked his big round curious eyes. 'Little aunt, why is it if you and I sleep on uncle's bed then we can't live together in uncle Wei's home?'

Shi Dan Ping's bright smile stiffened and he glared at the little meatball who was a betrayer.

Wei Zhexue laughed as fresh as a spring's day. He squeezed Na Yuan's cheek. 'Precious darling, today you're the boss. Tell me who you want to live with and I'll make it happen for you.'

Na Yuan looked at uncle Wei then he looked at the bad uncle. Na Yuan sighed and he opened his mouth regrettably. 'I think it's best for me and my little aunt to live with Mr bad uncle.'

Shi Dan Ping's heart frozen by the little meatball's betrayal finally melted. He smiled brightly. It wasn't pointless to raise a rascal, because the little meatball did own a little conscience.

'Why? Precious darling, don't you want to live with me?' Wei Zhexue asked.

'Uncle Wei, Mr bad uncle isn't good like you. Uncle Wei, I'm certain you won't find anyone else willing to live with Mr bad uncle... if Mr bad uncle sleeps alone, it's very pitiful.'

Shi Dan Ping lost his bright smile. He couldn't believe the little meatball made him lost the first battle against Wei Zhexue, and Wei Zhexue didn't even attack yet. Shi Dan Ping decided the little meatball's bottom needed a good shine to teach the little meatball that trouble could come out of a careless mouth!

Na Na felt the atmosphere was gradually tenser. She coughed awkwardly. 'Little Yuan, you're full. Let's go home.'

‘Little aunt, I’m not full yet,’ Na Yuan said.

‘No, you’re full!’ Na Na said.

Na Yuan saw the threat in his little aunt’s eyes and he reluctantly nodded his head. ‘Ok, I’m full.’

Na Na was satisfied with little Yuan’s answer. She kissed the good little Yuan’s cheeks. She turned to Wei Zhexue and she thanked him. ‘Thank you for today. It’s getting dark, we need to take little Yuan back home.’

Wei Zhexue smiled at Na Na. ‘You don’t need to be courteous with me. It’s hard for you to look after little Yuan on your own. If you ever need help with anything, come find me.’

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. Was Wei Zhexue blind? Didn’t he count as a human? The little rabbit wasn’t alone, she had him to take care of her and the little meatball.

‘Ok, Na Na you had a tiring day too. Go home and have an early rest. I’ll wait for you and little Yuan here on the weekend to take both of you on a snow trip,’ Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na nodded her head. ‘Ok.’

Shi Dan Ping couldn’t stand the sight of Wei Zhexue a moment longer. He carried the little meatball in one arm and his free hand held the little rabbit’s hand. He led the little meatball and the little rabbit downstairs without a word of bye to Wei Zhexue.

Na Yuan leaned his chin on uncle’s shoulder and he waved his little chubby hand in uncle Wei’s direction. ‘Uncle Wei, see you later... Ah!’

Shi Dan Ping squeezed the little meatball’s bottom.

Na Yuan knew uncle was bad natured and he knew he couldn’t upset the uncle who was carrying him home. He obediently closed his mouth and rested his head on uncle’s chest.

On the way home, Na Na wanted Shi Dan Ping to forget about little Yuan’s embarrassing words at the restaurant so she averted Shi Dan Ping’s attention to dinner. ‘Doctor Shi, are you hungry? What do you want to eat for dinner? I’ll cook it for you when we get home.’

Na Yuan secretly pouted his lips at his little aunt.

Na Na gave little Yuan a warning glance. She quickly looked back at Shi Dan Ping and she smiled sweetly. 'Doctor Shi, do you like combination noodles? I'll cook it for you at home, ok?'

Shi Dan Ping couldn't believe the little rabbit and the little meatball only knew how to eat. He thought their two stomachs were like two rice buckets that were never full. But his stomach betrayed his thoughts and it growled loudly.

Na Na pretended she didn't hear anything. But Na Yuan wasn't as kind hearted as Na Na, he buried his face into Shi Dan Ping's chest and he laughed uncontrollably to the point his whole little chubby body shook from laughter.

Shi Dan Ping's handsome face flushed red. He gently slapped the rascal's bottom and he looked at the little rabbit. 'You know I haven't ate dinner and you still feel the need to say many useless words.'

Na Na smiled too sweetly. 'Yes, I was wrong. Tonight we'll eat combination noodles.'

Shi Dan Ping looked deviously at the little rabbit. 'No, I think we should eat... buns.'

'But it's hard to make buns... I have to knead dough and prepare the filling. By the time they're steamed it'll be midnight... oh! How about we go to the supermarkets and buy buns from the freezer? There's a certain brand of buns that after they're steamed they have a milky texture, smells fresh, soft on the outside and delicious on the inside too.'

Shi Dan Ping heard fresh smell and soft, he was persuaded. He smiled and nodded his head. 'Ok.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't know if it was because the milky buns were soft and smelt fresh so he thought they tasted delicious. But for dinner that night he ate eight milky buns and drank a large glass of milk.

It was the way Shi Dan Ping ate that was scarier than how many milky buns he ate. He held his knife and fork firmly and he accurately cut each piece of the milky buns. The evil gleam in his eyes were focused on the little rabbit who sat opposite him at the dining table, and he purposely slowly chewed each piece of

the milky buns.

Na Na didn't know why but she felt the way Shi Dan Ping stared intensely at her and how he slowly chewed the milky buns in his mouth was like... he was swallowing her. She hastily ate her milky bun and she ran away from the dining table to escape Shi Dan Ping's intense stare.

End of Chapter Thirty-Four (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirty-Four (Part 2 of 2)

In the morning the hospital's neurology department was busier than a popular place of worship.

Shi Dan Ping was in his work office and he typed something what doctors feared most, he typed a medical report which meticulously showed the circumstance that led to the patient's death. Doctors were scared of patients dying under their hands, because of potential lawsuits which was why medical reports about the causes that contributed to the patient's death were longer and more gruesomely detailed than eulogies.

Liu Nan poked her head through the gap of Shi Dan Ping's office door. She saw him madly typed on the keyboard and she thought he looked like he wore an enter-at-your-own risk sign around his neck. She wisely found another substitute to enter Shi Dan Ping's office for her.

Liu Nan gave a neuro patient's hospital records and release forms to Na Na. 'Hurry, these are a patient's records already updated. But the release forms need Doctor Shi's signature before the patient can be released. Na Na, hurry and give it to him to sign.'

Na Na was busy preparing patients' medication, but she put them down on a table to accept the stack of documents from Liu Nan. 'Right now?'

Liu Nan coughed to hide her fear. She nodded her head. 'I need them signed. Na Na, hurry and give them to Doctor Shi to sign.'

Na Na followed Liu Nan's instructions and she walked to Shi Dan Ping's office.

Shi Dan Ping was on the verge of eruption when the little rabbit entered his office.

Na Na put the patient's hospital records and release forms on Shi Dan Ping's work desk. 'Head nurse Liu wants you to sign this patient's release forms-'

Shi Dan Ping didn't look up from the computer screen and he didn't own enough patience to hear the little rabbit's explanation. 'I know, I'm busy. Let

head nurse Liu wait.'

'Doctor Shi, you're busy... I'll help you open the release forms to where you need to sign,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping wanted to say something sarcastic, but he felt the little rabbit's warmth drifted into his ears and he swallowed his sarcasm.

Shi Dan Ping's body tensed and his ten fingers hovered above the keyboard. He stiffly lifted his head and he looked at the little rabbit. 'Coffee!'

Na Na was used to Shi Dan Ping's bossiness so she didn't think he acted different from his usual self. She poured him a cup of coffee and she remembered to add a lot of sugar into his coffee.

The moment the little rabbit put the cup of coffee on Shi Dan Ping's desk, the sweet coffee fragrance helped him gradually regained his calmness.

Na Na moved a chair closer to Shi Dan Ping and she sat down on the chair. She opened the patient's release forms and she tagged the pages he needed to sign with mini post-it notes on the edge of the page.

Shi Dan Ping calmly finished the medical report.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't help but look at the little rabbit who sat beside him. The little rabbit wore a pink nurse uniform and it made her milky skin look whiter and softer. She scrunched her nose and she stuck out her pink lips. He thought she looked beautiful.

Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit just needed to stay beside him and everything felt ok. He opened his mouth as if he was possessed. 'Na Na, you just need to follow me.'

Na Na was surprised. She lifted her head and she looked at Shi Dan Ping. 'Huh?'

Shi Dan Ping quickly looked back at his computer screen. 'Follow me at work... when I'm in the operating room I want you there to assist me, when I'm at the clinic I want you to help me examine the patients, when I'm on work trips I want you to come with me too.'

'But... I still have to rotate around the hospital's departments. Besides, it's up

to the hospital to decide if I'm suitable to specialise in the neurology department,' Na Na said.

'Na Na... you don't want to?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na didn't know what to say. She spoke softly. 'No, it's not that I don't want to. The problem is I don't know if I'm allowed to-'

'As long as you agree it's ok. You don't need to worry about anything else,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na thought it was rare for doctors to request a nurse to be their personal nurse. Usually the hospital assigned nurses to assist doctors during surgeries and off-site work trips. She reasoned Shi Dan Ping probably thought she was a good nurse and it made her elated.

Liu Nan didn't wait long before she saw Na Na returned safely with the patient's hospital records and signed release forms.

Liu Nan checked all the patient's release forms and she was satisfied they were all signed by Shi Dan Ping. She turned to face Chen Jie. 'Miss Na Na is indeed the seventeenth floor's gem! Even the way Doctor Shi behaves when he's writing a medical report for a deceased patient is different than usual.'

Chen Jie looked in Na Na's direction and she saw Na Na was focused on checking patients' medication. Chen Jie laughed. 'The truth is Doctor Shi's bad nature can only be controlled by Na Na... it's because Na Na's relationship with Doctor Shi is different to everyone else's relationship with Doctor Shi.'

The rumour about Shi Dan Ping and Na Na's personal relationship was spread throughout the hospital long ago. Everyone knew the only person who could extinguish Shi Dan Ping's anger was Na Na. So Na Na's co-workers shamelessly would ask Na Na to deal with Shi Dan Ping when he was in a fiery mood.

Since Na Na arrived on the seventeenth floor of the hospital, the atmosphere was peaceful. Even Zhang Wei Dong felt his work life was smoother when Na Na was working alongside Shi Dan Ping.

Liu Nan and Chen Jie knew the only person who didn't understand the situation was Na Na, who was like a small working bee happily focused on work. Na Na didn't realise she was the seventeenth floor's gem to deflect Shi Dan

Ping’s anger away from the seventeenth floor.

End of Chapter Thirty-Four (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Thirty-Five (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping monitored the young male patient's progress closely for three days. He wanted the patient to regain consciousness, but sadly the patient was still unconscious three days after the surgery. He reluctantly signed the patient's forms to release the patient from the hospital room on the seventeenth floor.

Na Na heard a loud sob from a patient's room, and she quickly walked toward Chen Jie. 'What happened?'

'The patient's mum couldn't accept-' Chen Jie said.

'But the patient was examined before and the patient was still breathing. Why didn't the patient wake up?' Na Na said.

'It's been three days after the surgery and the patient hasn't woken up. Doctor Shi authorised for the patient to be released from here-' Chen Jie said.

Na Na didn't wait for Chen Jie's whole explanation, Na Na rushed to find Shi Dan Ping. 'Why did you decide to do this?'

The little rabbit barged into Shi Dan Ping's office and he frowned. 'What is it? Why are you in such a hurry?'

Na Na breathed heavily. 'Why did you release the patient from the seventeenth floor?'

'It's been more than forty-eight hours and the patient hasn't woken up. The patient can't keep occupying a bed here, there are other patients,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'But the patient is still alive! What about the patient's family... why are you giving up?' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping was startled by the little rabbit's angry outburst. 'Na Na, did you forget to take your medication this morning? Why are you being unreasonable?'

Na Na's face burnt with outrage, and in her eyes Shi Dan Ping was dry grass. 'You can't give up! The patient will wake up... it's only passed two days, why

can't you give the patient more time?'

Shi Dan Ping continued to type a medical report. 'It's following the hospital's procedures. It's been more than two days, the patient hasn't woken up and the likelihood of the patient waking up later is slim. The patient's family gave their consent to release the patient. The patient's family can decide whether to accept the hospital's arrangement to transfer the patient to another place outside the hospital for monitoring or they can decide to let the patient go.'

'I know! If the patient is transferred to a nursing home... what hope is left? It's a place for the patient to wait for death!' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping lifted his head from the computer screen and he looked at the little rabbit. 'Then what do you suggest I should do? The patient can be unconscious for eight or ten years and the patient may not wake up then. I can authorise the patient to keep occupying a bed here for monitoring, but can the patient's family cope with the financial burden of keeping the patient here?'

Na Na couldn't refute Shi Dan Ping's practicality.

Shi Dan Ping on the inside pitied the patient, the patient was too young and the patient didn't get to live a longer life.

'What right do you have to decide another person's fate?' Na Na asked weakly.

Shi Dan Ping was shocked, he stared at the little rabbit's teary eyes which looked like it focused somewhere far away from his work office and full of despair.

'The patient didn't die after the accident... the patient didn't die during the surgery... the patient is fighting to stay alive... what reason do you and the hospital have to give up on the patient?' Na Na asked.

Na Na felt cold tears flowed from her eyes. 'The patient still has a family! How can the patient give up on their family and let their family grieve and suffer? The patient is still young, how can the patient willingly die like this?'

Shi Dan Ping stood, he walked to the little rabbit and he held her shoulders which were trembling. 'Calm down. I'm a doctor, not a miracle worker. I can only treat a patient's symptoms, I have no control over a patient's fate.'

‘But the patient is still alive!’ Na Na said.

‘Did the patient wake up? No, the patient didn’t, it’s no different from the patient dying. Perhaps, the patient knows their family can accept the patient did their best to hang on for them but it’s time for the patient’s family to let the patient pass on,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Nonsense!’ Na Na said. She pushed Shi Dan Ping’s hands away from her shoulders. She slowly moved backward step by step away from him. ‘That’s just your excuse! I can’t believe I thought you were a good doctor... I didn’t think you were someone who cared about your own agenda and willing to hurt others! You... you’re not suitable to wear blue scrubs!’

Shi Dan Ping wasn’t angry by the little rabbit’s insult. He looked the little rabbit’s cold eyes, which resented him and he waited for the little rabbit to be a bit calmer.

‘Na Na, each new medical and nursing graduate is idealistic like you. No medical staff doesn’t want to be a good doctor or nurse... but like you they’re powerless against death. I admit I’m not a selfless doctor, but at least I have a conscience. On the days patients die under my hands, I can never have a peaceful sleep on those nights... Na Na you said I’m not suitable to wear blue scrubs... then tell me, what do I need to do to be suitable to wear blue scrubs?’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na bit her lips and her tears overflowed her cheeks.

Shi Dan Ping panicked on the inside. In the past he’d scolded people to the point they cried... but the despair and pain in the little rabbit’s eyes, she was suffering silently and it felt like it was the first time he truly saw someone cried.

Shi Dan Ping wrinkled his forehead and he wanted to comfort the little rabbit but he couldn’t move his feet and arms. He didn’t know what to say to comfort the little rabbit. ‘What is there to cry about?’

Na Na was disappointed in Shi Dan Ping... she felt like her last hope was extinguished.

Shi Dan Ping felt like something punctured the most vulnerable part of his heart, it hurt for him to breathe.

Shi Dan Ping took a deep breath and he struggled to open his mouth. ‘Don’t cry... can you tell me what’s hurting you?’

Shi Dan Ping touched the little rabbit’s wet cheek, but she immediately pushed his hand away, she turned around and she ran outside.

End of Chapter Thirty-Five (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirty-Five (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na's head was overwhelmed by conflicted thoughts, she ran downstairs.

Na Na knew Shi Dan Ping's words were reasonable, but it was hard for her to accept. How could she accept what he said was true... Na Hao was still in a nursing home, he was waiting for her to save him.

Na Na ran downstairs aimlessly, suddenly someone caught her arm and she fell into their chest.

Na Na blinked her blurry eyes and it took her a while to see it was Wei Zhexue who stopped her from running.

'Na Na, what's wrong?' Wei Zhexue asked.

'Wei Zhexue, is it you?' Na Na asked.

'Yes, it's me. Are you sick? Where does it hurt?' Wei Zhexue said.

Wei Zhexue held Na Na's shoulder and he led her to a bench under a shady tree. They sat on the bench and he touched her forehead to check her body temperature.

Na Na was a little calmer and she shook her head. 'I'm ok.'

Wei Zhexue looked closely at Na Na, and he pretended he couldn't see she was crying. 'It's good you're ok... don't be scared, if you need anything come find me. There's nothing that can't be solved.'

'If... someone important to you is unconscious and their doctor gave up hope they would wake up. Would you fight for them?' Na Na said.

'Was there an unconscious patient released from your floor today?' Wei Zhexue asked.

Na Na nodded her head.

Wei Zhexue was relieved Na Na wasn't sick. He sighed. 'If it was me, I don't know if I can let go of someone important to me... death is inevitable... there's no

one who wants to be separated forever from a close relative or friend.'

Na Na laughed bitterly. 'But no one has the right to decide another person's fate... if there's a tiny hope someone important to you will wake up, of course you'll do everything to keep them alive.'

Wei Zhexue nodded his head and he cautiously explained. 'Perhaps, it seems like Shi Dan Ping was uncompassionate by releasing the patient... but he's done everything he can as a doctor, it's not his fault... I think Shi Dan Ping does want to keep the patient longer for close monitoring, but he can't go against the hospital's procedures, all patients need to be treated equally. Shi Dan Ping can only accept the reality, there's nothing more he can do.'

'If it's wrong, why isn't anything changed?' Na Na asked weakly.

Wei Zhexue contemplated if each unconscious patient's situation was different, if it was right to give the same timeframe for each unconscious patient to wake up before stopping their treatment and monitoring them.

'Are all doctors cold blooded?' Na Na asked.

Na Na was disappointed Shi Dan Ping wasn't an exception.

Wei Zhexue rubbed Na Na's head. 'If doctors weren't strong willed, how can they let go of patients? No one is born naturally cold blooded. It's just doctors have faced patients dying too many times and they need to harden their hearts.'

Na Na wrinkled her forehead, she knew she was unreasonable but she couldn't bear letting someone so young die... she especially didn't want to see Shi Dan Ping who she believed in the most, be the one to let a young patient die... she didn't want to be disappointed by Shi Dan Ping.

Wei Zhexue patted Na Na's shoulder. 'Don't take it to heart. Later when you're faced with a similar situation, you'll understand clearer.'

There was discomfort in Na Na's heart, but she forced herself to smile. 'Thank you for your advice... I need to go back to work.'

Na Na returned to the seventeenth floor and the young male patient who laid on bed three was gone.

Na Na saw bed three's bedspread and pillow sheets were changed. A new

patient laid on bed three, her co-workers were busy with their own tasks as if bed three was never occupied by a young patient who was in the middle of life and death.

Na Na felt her heart was hung in public and her vision was blurred by intense sadness. She turned away from bed three and she was faced with Shi Dan Ping's cold eyes.

Shi Dan Ping walked toward the little rabbit, he gave a copy of the young male patient's forms for her to file and he spoke calmly. 'This is a copy of bed three patient's consent forms the patient's family signed... and a copy of the patient's release forms the patient's family signed to agree to let the patient go.'

Na Na stared at the forms Shi Dan Ping put in her hands for a long time before she could open her mouth. 'I'm really sorry... I shouldn't have criticised you.'

Shi Dan Ping's temple muscles tensed. 'Na Na, control your emotions at work. This is a hospital, don't let your emotions affect your work.'

Na Na's eyes were teary and she grabbed Shi Dan Ping's hand. 'Doctor Shi, tell me, what do you do to cope?'

'It's simple... Na Na, don't waste your energy on someone you know can't be saved after you did everything possible... use that energy to save others who can be saved,' Shi Dan Ping said. He paused for a while because he was worn out from a stressful day. 'I once heard a saying, save grieving tears for funerals, it shouldn't be taken to work.'

Na Na reflected on Shi Dan Ping's advice.

Shi Dan Ping understood what the little rabbit was going through, because everyone in the same field as them experienced the same initiation at work. But the little rabbit was too stubborn and he knew it would be hard for her to let go of her beautiful ideals. His heart sighed. He forced himself to retrieve his hand from her hand and he walk passed her.

End of Chapter Thirty-Five (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Thirty-Six

Chapter Thirty-Six

At dinner, Na Yuan felt there was something strange about uncle and his little aunt. Uncle and his little aunt ate dinner without talking.

Na Yuan swallowed a spoon of rice and a braised egg. He looked back and forth at uncle and his little aunt. 'Little aunt... uncle... are you two fighting?'

Na Na lifted her head and she secretly glanced at Shi Dan Ping who sat opposite her, she turned to little Yuan and she forced herself to smile. 'We're not fighting. Hurry up and eat, your dinner is getting cold.'

Na Yuan swallowed another spoon of rice. 'But... if little aunt and uncle aren't fighting, why aren't you and uncle talking to each other?'

'Eat don't speak, sleep don't speak,' Shi Dan Ping said without lifting his head from his bowl.

Na Yuan looked at his little aunt. 'What does that mean?'

'It means when you're eating and sleeping, you can't talk,' Na Na said.

Na Yuan's young brain didn't understand why if he was eating, he couldn't speak. He looked at uncle's scary expression and he closed his mouth. His shaky hand used a spoon to pick up a braised egg from a plate and he pass the spoon to uncle. 'Uncle, eat this.'

Shi Dan Ping frowned and he pretended he didn't like the braised egg. But he opened his mouth and he ate the braised egg the little meatball gave him. 'Eat your dinner.'

After dinner Na Na washed the dishes and Shi Dan Ping bathed Na Yuan.

A clean Na Yuan walked into uncle's room and he jumped on uncle's giant soft bed. He gently kicked his little foot on uncle's leg. 'Uncle... uncle, are you angry?'

Shi Dan Ping laid on the bed and he hugged the little meatball. He rubbed the little meatball's head and he pretended he didn't hear anything.

Na Yuan poked his little chubby finger on uncle's chest like an adult who

advised a child. 'Uncle, you're really petty. Daddy said a man shouldn't be petty toward a little girl. Little aunt is a little girl, men like us shouldn't be petty toward little aunt.'

Shi Dan Ping gently slapped the little meatball's bottom and he scoffed. 'Uncle only cares about my 'agenda and hurting others' so it doesn't matter how petty I am.'

Na Yuan didn't understand uncle's deep words. He just remembered the way his little aunt looked whilst she ate dinner. 'But little aunt is really sad.'

'Your little aunt is sad? The person who was criticised unfairly was uncle! I should be the one who is sad,' Shi Dan Ping said.

It wasn't the first time someone criticised Shi Dan Ping, but it was who criticised him that made him deeply hurt. He couldn't believe the little rabbit unfairly criticised him. He thought the little rabbit was someone who he could hold hands with and walk on a long road together.

Shi Dan Ping was lost in his thoughts when he felt something wet on his face. The little meatball laid on his chest and kissed his face. The little meatball's head rubbed his neck. 'Uncle, don't be sad. I have a way to make uncle and little aunt make up!'

Shi Dan Ping's heart was melted by the little meatball's warmth and innocence.

Shi Dan Ping squeezed the little meatball's cheeks and he laughed. 'Little rascal! What's your solution?'

Na Yuan was offended uncle didn't believe his solution would work, he scoffed. 'Little aunt loves me. Little aunt will agree if I ask little aunt to make up with uncle.'

Na Na finished cleaning and tidying the kitchen. She didn't need to look for little Yuan, because she knew little Yuan would be glued to Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na felt little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping were like twins born to playfully oppose each other, the two of them together would naively bicker with each other. No matter how sharp little Yuan's tongue was, it wasn't in the same league as Shi Dan Ping's tongue. Usually little Yuan would be teased by Shi Dan Ping to the point little Yuan's eyes were teary and little Yuan would run to her for comfort...

but it didn't matter how often little Yuan and Shi Dan Ping bickered, little Yuan always remembered the good times and forgot about the teasing. In a blink of an eye, little Yuan would excitedly glue himself to Shi Dan Ping and they would play together and cause a racket.

Na Na hesitated to open Shi Dan Ping's bedroom door until she heard little Yuan called her and she opened the door.

Inside the room Na Na saw Shi Dan Ping rested his back against the bedhead, one of his arm was wrapped around little Yuan's shoulder and little Yuan played with his arm whilst his free hand held a newspaper.

Na Na coughed awkwardly. 'Little Yuan, it's your bedtime. Let's go back to our rooms and sleep.'

Na Yuan was happily pinching uncle's arm, he shook his head. 'We don't need to. Little aunt... uncle... can't the three of us sleep on uncle's bed like we usually do?'

Na Na was too embarrassed to refuse little Yuan's innocent request.

Shi Dan Ping took off his glasses and put it down with the newspaper on the bedside table. He laid on the bed and he spoke calmly. 'Recently we bought two new bedspreads.'

Na Na looked confusedly at Shi Dan Ping.

'You don't need to worry about blood staining the bedspread,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na's face flushed red, she laid next to little Yuan. Little Yuan hugged her and he kicked his little legs happily.

The tranquil night helped doused the emotional day. Shi Dan Ping, Na Yuan and Na Na slept straight on their backs. Na Yuan laid in the middle of Shi Dan Ping and Na Na and his little chubby hand held each of their hands.

Na Yuan didn't forget his important mission and his voice broke the tranquil night. 'Little aunt... uncle knows he was wrong, little aunt please forgive uncle.'

Shi Dan Ping gritted his teeth. That cheeky little rascal!

Na Na exhaled gently. 'I'm really sorry Doctor Shi. I was wrong... you have your

reasons and opinions. I shouldn't have tried to enforce my opinions on you. I shouldn't have been unreasonable angry with you.'

Shi Dan Ping stayed silent in the dark.

Na Yuan couldn't stand uncle's silence and he squeezed uncle's hand.

Shi Dan Ping's throat and mouth were too dry to speak. He wanted to squeeze the little meatball's troublesome chubby hand, but the little meatball impatiently spoke. 'Uncle... little aunt forgave uncle. Uncle, don't be angry anymore.'

Shi Dan Ping squeezed the little meatball's palm and he scoffed. 'I shouldn't be petty toward someone who is missing some IQ, otherwise I'll be a fool.'

Shi Dan Ping's insult relaxed Na Na's heart, and she laughed happily.

Shi Dan Ping didn't want to waste his energy fighting with the little rabbit, and he didn't bother glancing once at the little rabbit.

Na Yuan felt adults were troublesome, adults didn't understand and they needed him to solve their fights. He laughed triumphantly and he boasted. 'Uncle... aren't I impressive? Little aunt agreed to make up with you.'

'Little balloon, what did you do that was impressive?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Yuan rolled over and his bottom faced uncle. He hugged his little aunt. 'Little aunt... aren't I really impressive?'

Na Na didn't know whether to laugh or cry, she kissed little Yuan's cheek. 'Little Yuan is the most impressive!'

'I'm not the most impressive, because Miss Tu is the most impressive,' Na Yuan said.

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na knew Miss Tu was Na Yuan's preschool teacher.

'How is Miss Tu impressive?' Na Na asked.

Na Yuan laughed and he spoke loudly. 'Miss Tu said, a boyfriend and a girlfriend fighting together will make up after sleeping in bed. Little aunt and uncle were fighting, but after sleeping in bed you both made up.'

Na Na's lips quivered as it mumbled 'sleeping in bed' softly, and she covered her face.

Na Yuan laughed himself to sleep and his even breath was heard in the restored tranquil night.

The tranquil night was broken again, but it was Shi Dan Ping who laughed. 'Indeed very impressive... in the future if we fight, let's 'sleep in bed' together and make up.'

Na Na felt it was lucky the darkness hid her hot red face.

Na Na laid motionlessly straight on the bed, she closed her eyes and she pretended she was asleep. Her heart pounded painfully against her rib cage... she couldn't underestimate the strange feeling in her heart... because she couldn't deny her heart was falling for Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping sat up, he moved the little meatball to his side. He laid down in the middle and he wrapped an arm each around the little meatball and the little rabbit's shoulders.

Na Na couldn't pretend she was sleeping, her legs and arms tensed and she didn't know where to put her legs and arms.

Na Yuan was woken up and his head found a comfortable spot on uncle's chest. 'Uncle... isn't this called boyfriends hugging each other?'

Na Na couldn't believe little Yuan talked nonsense again. She didn't know if she should transfer little Yuan to another childcare or not.

Shi Dan Ping squeezed the little meatball's cheek. He wanted to know who taught the little boy nonsense.

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little meatball and the little rabbit's tensed body closer to his chest. 'Be quiet! Sleep.'

End of Chapter Thirty-Six

Related

part 1

Chapter Thirty-Seven (Part 1)

On the weekend Na Yuan was the first one to wake up. He ran to his room and packed his ski helmet, ski goggles and a spare set of clothes into his little suitcase. He set his ski jacket, scarf and gloves on his bed. Then he quickly brushed his teeth and washed his face, he wore thermals under his shirt and ski pants.

Na Yuan was ready to go and he ran to his little aunt's room to see if she finished packing.

Na Na knew it was a long time since little Yuan didn't get to ski. She squatted, rubbed little Yuan's head and she whispered in his ear. 'Little Yuan, go ask uncle if he's coming skiing with us.'

Since last night, Shi Dan Ping was in a bad mood. Na Na knew the word skiing was taboo in Shi Dan Ping's home so she delegated the task of asking Shi Dan Ping if he was going skiing with them to little Yuan.

Na Yuan didn't understand why uncle was in a bad mood, but he didn't want his snow trip delayed if his little aunt didn't want to go because uncle stayed at home. He ran to uncle's room and he was happy uncle packed his suitcase already. 'Uncle, little aunt asked if you're going skiing with us.'

Shi Dan Ping's expression was scary, but on the inside his mind and heart were one – 'Of course I'm going! Of course I want to go!'

The little rabbit was a simpleton. Shi Dan Ping wouldn't be at peace if he let the little rabbit leave his sight and let the stinky Wei Zhexue spend alone time with the little rabbit. If Shi Dan Ping didn't go, another green vein would pop on his forehead from thinking about what the stinky Wei Zhexue would do to the little rabbit.

Na Na finished packing, she walked to the front door and she saw Shi Dan Ping was waiting for her. Shi Dan Ping looked away from her, he lifted little Yuan and he carried little Yuan and his suitcase outside.

Na Na quickly changed shoes and she locked the front door. She carried her suitcase and little Yuan's suitcase and she chased after Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan to the chicken restaurant.

Wei Zhexue parked his car in front of the chicken restaurant and he waited for Na Na and Na Yuan. He saw them from a distance and he waved to them.

'Did you wait long?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue opened the trunk and he helped Na Na put her suitcase and little Yuan's suitcase inside the trunk. 'I just got here.'

Wei Zhexue opened the front passenger door for Na Na, but Shi Dan Ping put Na Yuan on the front passenger seat before Na Na could sit on it.

Wei Zhexue gave Shi Dan Ping a not-impressed look.

Shi Dan Ping opened the back passenger door for the little rabbit and he looked at her like he was the king of the castle.

Na Na forced herself to smile and she sat on the back passenger seat.

Shi Dan Ping smiled and he looked triumphantly at Wei Zhexue.

Wei Zhexue ignored Shi Dan Ping's smugness, he sat in the driver's seat and he drove everyone to the ski resort.

Na Yuan was restless in the car. He turned around and chatted with his little aunt then he looked at uncle Wei and asked him questions about the ski resort.

Wei Zhexue was good natured, he drove and happily answered Na Yuan's questions.

It was lively at the front of the car and peaceful at the back of the car.

Shi Dan Ping was in a bad mood since last night, he looked silently outside the car window on the way to the ski resort. Na Na sat next to him, their shoulders touched occasionally. She felt too nervous and tensed to chat with him so she sat still on one spot.

Although the ski resort was far from the hospital, there was no traffic and they quickly arrived at the ski resort safely.

Wei Zhexue parked the car in the drop off zone in front of the ski resort. Na

Yuan cheered, he opened the passenger door and he jumped out of the car.

‘Little Yuan, be careful or you’ll fall,’ Wei Zhexue said.

Wei Zhexue went to park the car at the parking bay. Na Na and Shi Dan Ping brought Na Yuan inside the ski resort first.

Shi Dan Ping lined up and he bought four entry tickets. When Wei Zhexue joined them, Shi Dan Ping gave everyone their tickets.

After Na Na changed into ski boots, she helped little Yuan put on his ski helmet and ski goggles.

Wei Zhexue and Na Yuan attached their skis to their ski boots, they held their ski poles and they skied on the green circle ski trail.

Na Na looked suspiciously at Shi Dan Ping who just wore ski boots. ‘What’s wrong? You can’t find skis for your shoe size?’

Shi Dan Ping silently fumed and looked at the little rabbit.

Na Na didn’t know what was wrong, she sat in front of him and helped him put on skis. ‘Do you want to test them out?’

Shi Dan Ping’s bad mood turned good when he looked down at the little rabbit who carefully helped put on his skis. His heart pounded and he wanted the little rabbit to always take care of him.

Na Na stood and she patted Shi Dan Ping’s shoulder. ‘Ok, let’s ski.’

Shi Dan Ping gripped his ski poles, he took a deep breath, moved his shaky legs and his bottom immediately fell onto the ground.

Na Na was speechless, she quickly looked away and she suppressed her laughter to the point she nearly fell too.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit’s shoulders shook and he knew she refrained from laughing. ‘What is there to laugh about? What’s so good about knowing how to ski?’

Shi Dan Ping didn’t like noisy places and it included ski resorts. Beside, when he was younger he was busy studying and after he started working he was busier so there was no free time for him to ski.

Na Na never seen Shi Dan Ping worked up about not knowing how to do something before and she couldn't stop herself from laughing loudly.

Shi Dan Ping stood straight and he glared at the little rabbit. 'Na Na, if you keep laughing I'll make you fly like a plane.'

Na Na believed Shi Dan Ping could make her fly off the mountain like a plane. She put their ski poles on the ground and she put her hands in front of Shi Dan Ping. 'I'll help you to enter the ski trail. Don't worry, we'll go slowly and you won't fall.'

Shi Dan Ping held the little rabbit's soft hands.

'You're doing good... you don't need to be scared, it's like learning to ride a bike, if you keep moving you won't fall,' Na Na said.

As a neurosurgeon Shi Dan Ping's role model was Dr Cushing who was considered the father of modern neurosurgery. In his work life, he did his best to emulate Dr Cushing's professionalism. Unlike his work life, his private life at that moment was laughable, his body never been so stiff before and he needed someone else to slowly pull him forward... but it was the little rabbit who held his hands and slowly pulled him forward. He didn't mind losing his usual professional image as long as the little rabbit held his hands.

The little rabbit led Shi Dan Ping to the green circle ski trail. He heard the laughter of young children as they skied passed him and the little rabbit. He was scared and he gripped the little rabbit's hands. The little rabbit didn't lose her patience and she never let go of his hands.

Shi Dan Ping wasn't scared of falling, he was scared of falling in front of the stinky Wei Zhexue!

Na Yuan and Wei Zhexue skied two rounds of the green circle ski trail before they saw Shi Dan Ping and Na Na slowly started the ski trail.

The little meatball skied slower than Wei Zhexue, but the little meatball was a good skier and his short chubby legs were nimble. The little meatball dared to stop in front of Shi Dan Ping, dared to laugh and he taunted Shi Dan Ping. 'Uncle, you sure are steady on your feet... hehe...'

Shi Dan Ping wanted to squeeze the little meatball's chubby cheeks, but the

little meatball skied out of his reach and the little meatball dared to shake a chubby bottom in front of his face. 'Hehe... uncle, you can't catch me... hehe...'

Shi Dan Ping didn't dare let go of the little rabbit's hands otherwise he wanted to discipline the little meatball!

Na Na didn't dare look at Shi Dan Ping who owned a fiery temper. She was scared little Yuan's teasing would get little Yuan into trouble and she quickly distracted little Yuan. 'Little Yuan, do you want to have a race with me and see who's faster?'

Na Na let go of Shi Dan Ping's hands and she retrieved her ski poles nearby to race with little Yuan.

Na Yuan's eyes lit up and he cheered. 'Ok! Uncle Wei, race with me and little aunt too.'

'Ok little Yuan, let's race.' Wei Zhexue said. He looked triumphantly at Shi Dan Ping. 'If Doctor Shi isn't joining our race, you can help us by being the referee.'

Shi Dan Ping wanted to punch the stinky Wei Zhexue's smug face!

Wei Zhexue wasn't scared of Shi Dan Ping, he waved his hand and he laughed. 'Thank you Doctor Shi.'

The stinky Wei Zhexue took the little meatball and the little rabbit away and Shi Dan Ping was left behind. Shi Dan Ping struggled step by step to move to a bench that didn't obstruct the ski trail. He sat on the bench and he watched them ski to their hearts content.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little meatball's mouth was wide opened like the little meatball was cheering loudly. There were expert skiers who helped young children learn to ski, but Shi Dan Ping's eyes were solely focused on the little rabbit, the little meatball and the stinky Wei Zhexue. His eyes burned with jealousy... like he was watching his little wife cheat on him with another man right in front of him. The stinky Wei Zhexue held the little meatball's hand and they skied alongside the little rabbit. They laughed loudly together like a happy family of three... his heart ached.

End of Chapter Thirty-Seven (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Little Yuan skied for half a day and his energy was depleted. Na Na carried little Yuan and she skied to Shi Dan Ping who sat on a nearby bench. She gave little Yuan a bottle of water to drink then she took off his ski helmet and ski goggles to wipe sweat off his face.

Wei Zhexue smoothly skied to the bench.

‘Uncle Wei you’re a great skier! Uncle Wei, can you take me skiing with you another time too?’ Na Yuan asked.

Wei Zhexue laughed and he squeezed Na Yuan’s chubby cheeks. ‘Of course! I’ll take you skiing often.’

Na Yuan shook uncle Wei’s hand to seal their promise. Na Yuan glanced at uncle and he sighed. ‘Uncle is pitiful, he can’t ski. Uncle Wei can you teach uncle how to ski?’

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. His bad mood soured. He wasn’t pitiful! He didn’t care about skiing! He didn’t need the stinky Wei Zhexue to teach him how to ski!

Wei Zhexue glanced at the furious Shi Dan Ping. He turned to face Na Yuan and he smiled. ‘Ok, if Doctor Shi wants me to teach him how to ski, uncle will be happy to be Doctor Shi’s teacher.’

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. Stinky Wei Zhexue! As if he would want the stinky Wei Zhexue to be his teacher!

Na Na looked back and forth at Shi Dan Ping and Wei Zhexue and she was scared for her life. If something happened between Shi Dan Ping and Wei Zhexue the person who would suffer the most would be her.

Na Na abruptly stood. ‘It’s getting late, let’s leave.’

Wei Zhexue patted Shi Dan Ping’s shoulder. ‘Hey, don’t underestimate skiing. It’s a good skill to have... very useful.’

Wei Zhexue wisely carried Na Yuan and he skied smoothly to the ski resort.

Shi Dan Ping quickly understood why skiing was a useful skill... they heartlessly abandoned him. Who was going to help him take his skis off?

Shi Dan Ping sat motionless on the bench and immersed himself in loneliness. Suddenly the little rabbit appeared at his feet and she took off his skis for him. His loneliness was replaced by sweet happiness.

Na Na was worried Shi Dan Ping was embarrassed to show in front of others he couldn't even take off his skis. She skied with little Yuan and Wei Zhexue half way to the ski resort and she made an excuse she left something behind. She quickly skied back to the bench and she helped Shi Dan Ping take off his skis.

Shi Dan Ping felt free without skis, he never been so happy to see ski boots before. 'Let's go. It's getting late. We don't want to keep head nurse Liu and the others waiting.'

Wei Zhexue dropped off Na Na, Na Yuan and Shi Dan Ping at the chicken restaurant. Na Na and Shi Dan Ping brought Na Yuan quickly to the meeting place organised by Liu Nan. Occasionally, the hospital organised social outings on weekends. Since it was Liu Nan's turn to organise a social outing, Na Na and Shi Dan Ping were forced to attend.

The meeting place Liu Nan chose was a venue that facilitated a fine dining restaurant, a bar and karaoke rooms.

When Na Na, Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan arrived at the meeting place, Na Na was shocked her co-workers weren't surprised to see her and Shi Dan Ping brought along little Yuan. She found it strange no one asked about little Yuan, as if her co-workers expected to see little Yuan with them.

Na Yuan napped on uncle's chest and he wasn't happy to be woken up by strange aunties who squeezed his cheeks, rubbed his head and squeezed his hands.

Shi Dan Ping smiled too brightly and he didn't hesitate to hand over the little meatball to the nurses who couldn't resist the little meatball's cuteness. His eyes telepathically asked the little meatball – 'Take a look, is uncle Wei here to save you?'

Na Yuan was like a baby rabbit handed over to a pack of scary aunty wolves.

The aunties kept pinching and pulling him and his eyes brimmed with tears. He looked pleadingly at uncle to save him, but uncle just smiled evilly.

Most of the nurses were mums, they couldn't resist Na Yuan's cuteness and his big round teary eyes melted their hearts. They wanted to cuddle him, squeezed his cheeks and shower him with kisses.

Na Yuan looked pitifully at his little aunt. His little aunt saved him from the clutches of the strange aunties. He sat on his little aunt's lap and she fed him dinner.

Na Yuan skied for half the day so he had a big appetite for dinner. Whilst he ate his dinner he glared at uncle for not saving him from the strange aunties earlier.

The nurses felt Shi Dan Ping was in a bad mood the moment he arrived at the meeting place so during dinner they persuaded Na Na to sit next to Shi Dan Ping. The nurses felt their proactive decision was the right decision, because Shi Dan Ping happily ate his dinner next to Na Na and he didn't serve anyone cruel words for dessert.

End of Chapter Thirty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Thirty-Eight (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping didn't serve anyone cruel words for dessert, but his co-workers were nauseated by his PDA.

Na Na's mouth was pried apart by Shi Dan Ping's chopsticks, he tucked a piece of chicken meat in her mouth. He took her by surprise, she couldn't spit out the chicken in front of her co-workers so she forced herself to swallow the chicken.

'Ooh...' everyone at the table teased.

Na Na's face flushed red, she didn't know if was from embarrassment or from choking on the chicken.

'Delicious?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

In front of many eyes focused on Na Na's reaction, she forced herself to nod her head.

Everyone at the table were used to Shi Dan Ping's cruel mouth and his bad nature. When they were faced with a gentle and a smiley Shi Dan Ping who attentively fed Na Na, it made everyone nauseated and they lost their appetite despite the delicious platters of food on the table.

Na Yuan's stomach was the only one unaffected, but he felt neglected by his little aunt. 'Little aunt, feed me.'

Chen Jie who sat next to Na Na, laughed and she thought Na Yuan was too young to understand the situation. She put out her arms. 'Little Yuan, are you still hungry? Come here and let aunty feed you, ok?'

Na Yuan shook his head and he hugged his little aunt.

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little meatball who was a little third wheel. He happily gave the little meatball to Chen Jie.

Na Yuan protested but Chen Jie hugged him and consoled him. 'Little Yuan, be good. Aunty will feed you a big chicken leg.'

Na Yuan saw uncle's warning look and he obediently chewed the chicken leg

aunty Chen fed him.

Without little Yuan on Na Na's lap, she felt shy next to Shi Dan Ping. She didn't dare to look at him or at the faces around the table that were smiling slyly.

'A few days ago... mmm... Na Na, eat some nutritious food to nourish your body,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping continuously fed the little rabbit vegetables and meat.

Liu Nan was the first one who dared to laugh and she spat out the soup in her mouth. 'Little Ping... you know how to be considerate and be attentive to someone else? Hehe... it's truly a scary sight.'

Shi Dan Ping was too blissful to care, he continued to feed the little rabbit and he felt full watching her eat.

Na Na felt being fed by Shi Dan Ping in front of her co-workers was a burden and she was full since the first piece of chicken meat Shi Dan Ping fed her.

Shi Dan Ping was energised by feeding the little rabbit like he was feeding bread to ducklings on a pond.

Na Na couldn't take another bite. She picked up a piece of beef with her chopsticks, she smiled sweetly and she fed the beef to Shi Dan Ping. 'Doctor Shi, you should eat too. Don't worry about me.'

Shi Dan Ping glanced at the beef and he smiled too brightly at the little rabbit.

Na Na realised her action made her co-workers misunderstand hers and Shi Dan Ping's relationship more. She tried to retrieve her chopsticks but it was too late. Shi Dan Ping opened his mouth wide, his teeth bit onto the beef and he swallowed. Then he smiled at her and his tongue licked the tips of the chopsticks as if he was licking her.

'Aunty Chen, why are you covering my eyes? I can't see anything,' Na Yuan said.

Little Yuan's words made Na Na's cheeks blushed red, she buried her head in the bowl and she wanted to protest. It was Shi Dan Ping's suggestive actions, why was she the one who was embarrassed?

'Little Yuan, be good. Right now there are scenes not suitable for innocent

young children to see. Auntie will uncover your eyes later,’ Chen Jie said.

Na Yuan understood and he nodded his head. ‘Yes, auntie Chen. Is little aunt and uncle playing kissing again?’

Chen Jie looked suspiciously at Shi Dan Ping who was smiling brightly at Na Na then she looked at Na Na who looked lovingly at Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na glared at Shi Dan Ping, it was Shi Dan Ping’s fault Chen Jie covered little Yuan’s eyes and made nonsense talk come out of little Yuan’s mouth.

Everyone else like Chen Jie thought Na Na and Shi Dan Ping were exchanging loving looks. Everyone simultaneously put down their chopsticks and goose bumps rose on their skin.

‘I’m full,’ Liu Nan said.

Zhang Wei Dong sipped a little wine and he laughed a jolly laugh. ‘Hehe... newlyweds... little Na is a capable girl! I never knew little Ping could be gentle to this extent.’

Na Na was too choked with embarrassment to explain. She bit her chopsticks like how she bit her pens in school if she was embarrassed in class.

Shi Dan Ping kept his eyes on the little rabbit’s pink lips and flashes of her white teeth. His Adam’s apple reflexively bounced up and down his throat.

Liu Nan laughed. ‘Oh, someone quickly pass Doctor Shi a glass of water. Today’s an especially hot day. His throat is too dry and if he doesn’t drink something soon his nose will start bleeding.’

Shi Dan Ping glanced coldly at Liu Nan and he scoffed. He turned and smiled at the little rabbit. ‘Na Na, are you full?’

Na Na nodded her head. If she was fed anymore food, she would throw up everything she ate.

Liu Nan looked at the table still full of delicious food, but everyone was full from Shi Dan Ping’s nauseous PDA. She sighed. ‘Na Na, are you certain you’re full? I don’t want the food on the table to be wasted.’

Shi Dan Ping ignored Liu Nan. He smiled at the little rabbit and he draped an arm around the little rabbit’s chair. ‘Na Na if you’re full, don’t you think you

should feed me more food?’

Everyone were speechless. Chen Jie reluctantly let go of her hands that covered Na Yuan’s eyes. Chen Jie sighed, Na Yuan was a loveable innocent little boy and she was worried raised by a wolf like Shi Dan Ping would corrupt Na Yuan.

Apart from the full stomachs of the family of three, everyone else only nibbled a bit of food and they were too nauseous to eat anything else. Everyone realised compared to Shi Dan Ping’s cruel words, his PDA was scarier.

End of Chapter Thirty-Eight (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Thirty-Eight (Part 2 of 2)

Liu Nan led her co-workers to the biggest karaoke room after dinner. There was enough room for people to sing, play cards or drink wine.

Na Yuan was excited to see a karaoke room for the first time in his life. He pulled his little aunt's shirt sleeve and he asked if he could sing.

Inside the karaoke room, Na Yuan was the boss of the microphone. Na Yuan happily sang children songs.

Everyone was scared of offending Shi Dan Ping so they didn't protest about Shi Dan Ping's little Yuan's song choices.

Na Yuan stood on a table, held his microphone and sang children songs passionately. Na Yuan also swayed his chubby bottom in sync with the songs. It moved the maternal hearts who sat on the sofa, they cheered and applauded Na Yuan's adorable performance.

After Na Yuan's last song, he jumped down from the table and he hugged his little aunt. 'Little aunt, you should sing a song too. It's fun!'

'Yes, Na Na you should sing a song. Where's the other microphone? Give it to Doctor Shi,' Liu Nan said.

'Of course Doctor Shi should sing a duet with Na Na,' Chen Jie said.

Everyone pushed Na Na and Shi Dan Ping in front of the karaoke screen.

Na Na and Shi Dan Ping stared at each other and they anticipated singing a song together.

'What should they sing? Guang Dao Zhi Lian (张智霖 莫文蔚-广岛之恋 Karen Mok ft Jilian Chang)?' Zhang Wei Dong asked.

'No... what about Jin Tian Ni Yao Jia Gei Wo (今天你要嫁给我 Marry Me Today by David Tao ft Jolin Tsai)?' Liu Nan asked.

Chen Jie's eyes shone brightly and she immediately chose the song 'Marry Me Today' for Na Na and Shi Dan Ping to sing.

Na Na and Shi Dan Ping's harmonised voices captivated their audience. Even Na Yuan silently sat on the sofa and he listened attentively to Na Na and Shi Dan Ping's impressive singing voices.

Na Na sang and she secretly stole glances at Shi Dan Ping and her heart pounded louder than the speakers. She felt it was lucky her heart didn't hold a microphone otherwise her heart beats would be broadcasted to everyone in the karaoke room.

In the past Na Na sang karaoke with her male classmates, but she wasn't nervous and giddy when she sang with her male classmates like how she was nervous and giddy signing next to Shi Dan Ping.

Everyone else were shocked, because no one expected Shi Dan Ping's cruel mouth could also sing gently and smoothly.

Na Na and Shi Dan Ping's performance was beautiful, except their voices trembled at the lyrics – 'Yes, I do.'

After the 'Marry Me Today' song ended, Shi Dan Ping gazed intensely at Na Na. Under his fiery gaze her heart melted.

The hot atmosphere in the karaoke room was broken by Na Yuan's loud cheer and praise.

Little Yuan's voice allowed Na Na to escape Shi Dan Ping's trance. She felt the room was humid to death, she put the microphone down and she ran outside the karaoke room.

Na Yuan didn't understand why his little aunt ran outside. 'Uncle, why did little aunt go outside?'

Shi Dan Ping's eyes gleamed evilly and he smiled. 'Your little aunt... is inviting me to go outside to do something with her that isn't suitable for young children to see.'

Shi Dan Ping chased after the little rabbit.

Na Na ran to the bathroom and she looked at her red hot face in the mirror.

Na Na's thoughts were full of Shi Dan Ping. He always teased her, but whenever she felt like she was at rock bottom it was him who helped her back on

her feet. He offered his home to her and little Yuan and he mentored her at work.

Na Na warned her heart Shi Dan Ping was a genius, rich and handsome... and she was just a new nurse with heavy responsibilities on her shoulders.

Na Na took a deep breath and she washed her hot face with cold water. She felt calmer and she walked outside the bathroom.

Na Na was in deep thought whilst she walked through the quiet hallway to the karaoke room. Suddenly someone grabbed her arm and pulled her into a dark room.

Na Na screamed but her captor covered her mouth and her back was pressed against the door.

‘It’s me,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na heard Shi Dan Ping’s familiar voice in the dark room. ‘Doctor Shi?’

Shi Dan Ping removed his hand that covered Na Na’s mouth. She felt his hot breath on her face which was recently washed with cold water, instantly boiled.

End of Chapter Thirty-Eight (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Thirty-Nine

Chapter Thirty-Nine

Na Na swallowed her saliva. She wanted to lessen the hot tension in the dark room. 'Shi... Doctor Shi, why are you here?'

Shi Dan Ping silently stepped closer to the little rabbit, and his nose touched her nose. He heard she was breathing heavily and his hands gripped her shoulders.

Na Na turned her face to the side. 'Oh, are you still... angry? I'm really sorry, I didn't know you couldn't ski and embarrassed you... but before you purposely made everyone misunderstand... about us... it's not good.'

Shi Dan Ping laughed and his lips touched the little rabbit's earlobe. 'Misunderstand what?'

Shi Dan Ping's breath tickled Na Na's earlobe and her body tensed. 'About us... in a relationship...'

'Aren't we in a relationship?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'Huh? How are we in a relationship?' Na Na asked.

'Na Na, you're living with me in my house, you're sleeping on my bed, we held hands and we kissed... don't you think we're in a relationship?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'But-' Na Na said.

'Or is it...' Shi Dan Ping said. His hands released the little rabbit's shoulders and his hands slowly moved down her back. 'We need to finish the final step before you'll count it as we're in a relationship?'

Na Na's will was weakened by Shi Dan Ping's logic, but in the dark room she shook her head because she felt what was happening to her was surreal. 'Doctor Shi... I'm really sorry. I was wrong... don't tease me anymore.'

Na Na couldn't see clearly in the dark room, but suddenly she felt an invisible cold wind swept through her bones.

Shi Dan Ping's fingers that were caressing the little rabbit's waist, gripped her waist after he heard her rejection. His fingers slowly let go of her and he took a step back away from her.

Na Na panicked, she turned around and she opened the door.

'Stop! You can't go back there,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na stood still and she bit her lips. 'Why? If we're not going back, where are we going?'

'I'm going for a massage. You can go anywhere you want to go, except you can't go back to the karaoke room,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping walked pass Na Na. Unlike inside the dark room, outside was bright. She couldn't stop the little tears that flowed out of her eyes. She wiped her eyes. Then she ran to catch up to him and to persuade him to come back with her. 'Don't you want to spend time with the others... we can go for a stroll with them later-'

'Be quiet!' Shi Dan Ping said. He turned around and he looked coldly at the little rabbit. 'If you go back this quickly, do you want others to suspect my endurance?'

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit's eyes were teary and his heart softened. He couldn't bear to look at her any longer, because his heart ached too much. He sighed and he decided out of sight, out of mind was the best choice. He turned around and he walked away.

Na Na wasn't familiar with the new surroundings and she thought it was better if she followed Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping knew the little rabbit was following him, but he pretended he didn't care. A young masseuse escorted him into a massage room.

'I'm sorry Miss, this is the men's massage room. The room on the right is the women's massage room,' the masseuse said.

Na Na saw the masseuse was a beautiful young girl in a pink dress uniform and the masseuse was pushing a trolley into the men's massage room. The masseuse's fingers were long and slender. Na Na didn't know why but her mind

and heart warned her to be careful of a vixen disguised as a masseuse. 'Are you... the one who will be massaging the man who just entered this massage room?'

The masseuse politely smiled at Na Na. 'Yes, I am. Miss, do you need anything?'

Na Na lowered her head and she gritted her teeth. 'Perhaps... is there a masseur available?'

The masseuse understood what Na Na was requesting and she laughed politely. 'Miss, do you need a masseur?'

Na Na lifted her head. 'Yes! Can you ask a masseur to take your place for this room?'

The masseuse politely nodded her head. 'Yes, Miss. Please wait a while and I'll ask a masseur to swap rooms with me.'

Na Na thought the massage service was good, because she didn't wait long before a masseur in a black collar shirt and black pants uniform was pushing a trolley into the men's massage room.

Shi Dan Ping finished showering and he lethargically laid head down on the massage bed. He was surprised it wasn't the young masseuse who entered the massage room instead it was a young masseur in a black uniform.

It wasn't the first time Shi Dan Ping had a massage. In the past he saw masseurs too, but masseurs massaged clients by request so usually it was masseuses who massaged clients. 'Is it busy today?'

The masseur prepared the massage oils and he laughed politely. 'It's not busy... but Mr, your girlfriend was worried and she requested a masseur to massage you.'

'My girlfriend?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'Yes, your girlfriend. The women of today... don't underestimate their weak exterior! You just came here for a massage. Your girlfriend could have just waited outside the door-' the masseur said.

Shi Dan Ping glared at the masseur and the masseur swallowed his words.

Shi Dan Ping didn't need to think too deeply who the masseur thought was his

girlfriend. His heart ache turned to joy. He didn't care he was naked, he stood, grabbed a towel and wrapped it around his waist. He rushed outside the massage room.

Na Na stood outside the men's massage room. She guarded the door because she was worried the masseuse would come back. Suddenly the door opened and Shi Dan Ping appeared in front of her. Her eyes lowered to his bare chest and she felt like her nose was going to bleed. 'Shi... Doctor Shi-'

Shi Dan Ping grabbed the little rabbit's arm and he pulled her into the massage room. He glared at the third wheel masseur. 'Go outside!'

The masseur bolted outside and he closed the door behind him.

'Why-' Na Na said. Shi Dan Ping frantically kissed her and his restless tongue destroyed her feeble protest.

Na Na never experienced such an urgent kiss. She wrapped her arms around Shi Dan Ping's neck and she felt the water drops on his neck like he just came out of a shower. He sucked and bit her lips, it was both painful and exhilarating.

Na Na was too nervous, she didn't know where to put her legs. She only felt Shi Dan Ping's naked skin. She struggled to breathe and stand upright. She leaned into his body and flower petals spun around her head.

It wasn't the first time Shi Dan Ping kissed Na Na. The last time he kissed her too swiftly and she couldn't savour his kiss... but the way he was kissing her inside the massage room made her realised the wide distance between a man and a woman's physical strength. His strength didn't frighten her, it only made her heart explode.

Na Na opened her mouth and she gasped for air. It cleared her head a little and she realised she wasn't standing, but her body laid down on the massage bed and Shi Dan Ping laid on top of her.

Shi Dan Ping licked Na Na's neck. 'Don't need too... Doctor Shi...'

Shi Dan Ping's hand slid inside Na Na's shirt. He rubbed his nose along her jawline. He moved his head upward, his lips kissed her forehead, her eyelids and he kissed her hot face.

‘Na Na... you know...’ Shi Dan Ping whispered.

‘What do I know?’ Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping lightly bit Na Na’s nose. ‘You know I’m not teasing you. I’m really happy you can feel how I feel about you.’

Na Na felt like she was burnt alive. Shi Dan Ping bit her shoulder, he licked her collar bone and his tongue slowly moved lower... she panicked. ‘Doctor Shi... not here-’

Shi Dan Ping kissed Na Na’s lips and he smiled. ‘Ok...’

Na Na exhaled gently and she pulled her shirt over her exposed shoulders.

‘The bed here is too small. Let’s go home and continue,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

End of Chapter Thirty-Nine

Related

Forty

Chapter Forty

Shi Dan Ping put on his clothes as fast as Na Na adjusted her shirt. He didn't bother to dry his wet hair, he hastily led her outside and he hailed a taxi for them.

Shi Dan Ping gave the taxi driver his home address. Then he spoke in a louder voice. 'Please drive fast.'

Na Na's embarrassment turned to anger and she pushed Shi Dan Ping's restless hands away from her body. She was too embarrassed to check if the taxi driver was looking at them through the front mirror.

Shi Dan Ping didn't bother to hide his desire. He hugged Na Na and she let him pawed her. He rubbed his chin on her shoulder, he kissed her, he caressed her body and he licked her skin like an affectionate puppy.

Na Na was shy and she couldn't believe the usually poisonous mouth of Shi Dan Ping who could be colder than a snowy mountain also warmed her heart with joy... and anticipation for what was going to happen when they were home.

Na Na remembered the conversations with her female classmates about sex. Although it was going to be her first time, she wasn't a simpleton without expectations. As part of her daily job she frequently saw naked male bodies when she helped them wash and clean their bodies. So she wasn't naive about the differences between a man and a woman's body.

Na Na understood Shi Dan Ping's urgency was because he desired her, it made her happy and her blood flowed crazily around her body.

Na Na thought Shi Dan Ping was bad natured, had a cruel mouth, he was petty, sometimes he teased her mercilessly... he wasn't her ideal dream boyfriend... but when he showed his gentle side it melted her heart. Her heart was jumbled with his good and petty traits... she wanted to follow him wherever he wanted to take her.

Na Na didn't know if it was because it was warm inside the taxi and the stars

shimmered in the night sky outside the window... but she felt Shi Dan Ping's tight embrace was a dream.

The traffic light colour changes outside the window broke some of the dreaminess from Na Na's eyes... she felt something wasn't right... like she forgotten something important.

Shi Dan Ping noticed the little rabbit wrinkled her forehead and his fingers smoothed the creases. 'What's wrong?'

Na Na shook her head. 'Do you feel something is wrong?'

Shi Dan Ping's hands continued to caress the little rabbit's skin. 'Something is wrong?'

Na Na frowned. 'Like... we forgotten something important?'

Shi Dan Ping's eyes were focused on the little rabbit's pink cheeks, her white teeth bit her pink lips, which looked both innocent and appealing to him. He felt an invisible hand rubbed against his heart and clouded his mind so there was no space for him to think about what important something he and the little rabbit forgot.

Shi Dan Ping's hands clasped the little rabbit's hands and he kissed her lips for her to forget about her worries.

Inside the karaoke room the forgotten Na Yuan pulled aunty Chen's shirt sleeve and he asked her to find his little aunt.

Chen Jie's eyes silently signalled to Liu Nan to quickly put on young children songs to distract Na Yuan... because Dr Shi said he and Na Na were doing something together that wasn't suitable for young children's eyes to see, and Chen Jie valued her life enough not to let Na Yuan interrupt Dr Shi and Na Na.

Inside the taxi Shi Dan Ping and Na Na failed to conceal moans and control their restless hands from each other's bodies. Their hot breaths fogged the back passenger windows.

The taxi driver glanced at the front mirror, he saw the young couple were glued to each other and he quickly looked back at the road.

The taxi driver cursed silently – 'Heavens! The youth of today! That hormonal

little boy in the back seat looked like he didn't have any control left, and the little boy was about to eat the little girl in the back seat.'

The taxi driver's foot stepped on the accelerator and he flew the young couple to their home.

Shi Dan Ping blindly grabbed money from his wallet and he gave it to the taxi driver. He opened the taxi door and he dragged the little rabbit home.

Inside Shi Dan Ping's room, he was too impatient to turn on the lights and he caged the little rabbit against the door.

Na Na didn't understand why Shi Dan Ping had a door fetish. She didn't want her first time to be with her back pressed uncomfortably against his bedroom door. She put her palms against his hot chest. 'Wait-'

One of Shi Dan Ping's hand held the little rabbit's neck and his other hand gripped her waist. He kissed her and his tongue dissolved the words on her tongue. He smiled the moment he felt her body was limp. He wrapped her leg around his waist and he caressed her soft bottom. 'Kiss me!'

Na Na wrapped her arms around Shi Dan Ping's neck, his sudden demand startled her but she heard the raw desire in his tone. She lowered her head and she inched her lips closer to his lips. Her shyness gradually evaporated in front of the man she loved and she imitated his kisses, she sucked his lips and she licked his tongue.

Shi Dan Ping who was a clean freak, was crazily happy the inexperienced little rabbit spread her saliva all over his lips and tongue.

Shi Dan Ping enjoyed the little rabbit's kiss as he carried her onto the bed. On the bed the moonlight through the opened window shone on her body that was underneath his body. He wanted to bite her pink cheeks. Her round watery eyes, petite nose and soft pink lips all mingled together and shone like a pearl... in his heart she was beautiful.

Shi Dan Ping's lips that trembled kissed the little rabbit's soft pink lips. His ten long nimble fingers quickly undressed himself and the little rabbit.

Na Na didn't realised she and Shi Dan Ping were naked until she felt the cold air passed through their hot bodies. Her hands covered his eyes. She whispered

weakly. 'Do you love me?'

Shi Dan Ping's hands froze on the little rabbit's thighs.

Na Na removed her hands and she bravely looked into Shi Dan Ping's eyes. She remembered the first time she saw his eyes... his eyes behind his glasses seemed to match someone with a cold heart and his eyes were sharp as a surgical scalpel... but she didn't know when his eyes lost its cold sharpness... like how he silently and slowly entered her heart without warning.

Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit wanted to die, because he thought she clearly knew he loved her and it wasn't necessary for him to say it out loud. He struggled to accept how much he loved her and it was harder for him to express it in words. Instead he lowered his head and he kissed her, he expressed how much he loved her with actions.

Na Na closed her eyes. She felt Shi Dan Ping's tenderness, but it didn't stop the strange twinge of pain that lodged into her heart.

Shi Dan Ping loved the little rabbit's soft skin and he couldn't stop himself from touching her soft skin. His fingers rubbed the most sensitive spots on her body.

Na Na's eyes were squeezed shut, her body cooperated with Shi Dan Ping's restless fingers but the moans that came out of her mouth embarrassed her to death.

Shi Dan Ping was satisfied with the little rabbit's reaction. He buried his head between her neck and shoulder and he lightly bit and sucked her neck and shoulder.

Shi Dan Ping lifted his head and he stared at the little rabbit's face that glowed beautifully under the moonlight. He wanted to swallow her into his stomach, but her innocence made him wanted to curb his impatience. She was a treasure that belonged only to him and he wanted for both of them to slowly be burned by their desires together.

End of Chapter Forty

Related

part 1

Chapter Forty-One (Part 1) *Spoiler warning – PG rating*

Na Na felt her body was a guitar strung by Shi Dan Ping's restless fingers.

Shi Dan Ping was satisfied the little rabbit's cheeks were pink, he bit her wet lips and his tongue slowly licked from her soft chest to her soft stomach.

Shi Dan Ping's tongue stopped at her waist. He saw a faint bruise on her waist and he hated himself for carelessly gripping her waist before. He kissed the bruise on the waist. He spread her legs and he buried his head between her legs. He sucked and licked the little rabbit's vulnerable spots whilst his hands fondled her soft breasts.

Na Na bit her hand and she rested her legs on Shi Dan Ping's back. His fingers, his lips and his tongue burned her skin and made her body tremble... she didn't know if she could take any more of the sweet agony. 'No... you don't need to-'

Shi Dan Ping lifted his head and he kissed the little rabbit's lips. His tongue transferred the little rabbit's taste onto the little rabbit's tongue. The sweat on his forehead dripped onto her forehead. He held her waist firmly and he swiftly entered her.

'Ah!' Na Na cried out.

Na Na felt the hardness of Shi Dan Ping's manhood was different to his long fingers. It was thicker, stiffer and she felt like it was going to rip her body apart. She didn't think it would invade the softest part of her body so painfully. The pain numbed her mind. Her arms clung around his neck and she breathed sporadically. In the midst of the pain that was excruciating, one thought dominated her mind... finally she gave all of herself to the man she loved. She willingly farewelled her virginity that accompanied her through many years of her life... though she felt parting with her virginity was too sudden, but in that moment despite the pain and her tears, she felt no regret... because the man she loved was Shi Dan Ping, she was able to endure the pain. His manhood entered into the deepest and the softest part of her, it was like a sharp knife pierced inside her and his name was permanently engraved at the core of her heart.

Shi Dan Ping's heart was chaotic as his mind, but at least he didn't lose all his senses and he was able to control himself until the little rabbit adjusted to their joined bodies. When his last shred of control vanished, his body moved accordingly to his raw instincts.

Na Na felt her first time wasn't smooth but her body joined with the man she loved and the desire in his eyes were solely inflamed because of her, comforted her pain.

Na Na finally could verify little Yuan's depiction of Shi Dan Ping's pee pee bird... indeed was very big!

The thought of little Yuan was like a lightning bolt, it struck her heart. She widened her eyes and she cried out. 'Ah! Wait... little... little Yuan... we forgot about little Yuan!'

The loud cry interrupted Shi Dan Ping's intimate moment with the little rabbit. His body stilled and he held the little rabbit's waist. He couldn't believe the little rabbit's mind wasn't consumed by him during intimacy.

'Quickly stand up. We need to call head nurse Liu... it's all my fault. If little Yuan can't find me, he'll be scared-' Na Na said.

'Na Na!' Shi Dan Ping called. He gritted his teeth. 'Do-you-want-to-murder-someone?'

Shi Dan Ping put aside his thoughts about slow consumption of the little rabbit in consideration it was her first time. He held her waist firmly. He spread her legs wide apart and he forcefully moved in and out of her. He roughly bit her sweaty neck.

'Ah! Stop... don't need...' Na Na said.

Na Na felt Shi Dan Ping's sudden movements both intensified her pain and excitement. She didn't know if her tears were tears of pain or pleasure. She wrapped her legs around his waist. His hands lifted her bottom and his manhood thrust deeper inside her. Her whole body trembled. She closed her eyes and she felt her soul left her body momentarily. She was immersed in her climax for a long time. Then she felt the walls of the softest part of her tightened around his manhood and he ejaculated.

Shi Dan Ping's satisfied and sweaty body laid on top of the little rabbit's body. He wiped the tears off the corner of her eyes and he didn't want to come out of her.

After Na Na's body relaxed, she was still sore between her legs and she realised Shi Dan Ping was still inside her. 'Come outside... it's uncomfortable!'

Na Na didn't receive a reply from Shi Dan Ping, but his manhood hardened again. 'You... how can you... again?'

Na Na couldn't believe Shi Dan Ping recently ejaculated, but his manhood hardened again so quickly... it was barbaric!

Shi Dan Ping kissed the little rabbit. 'This is an aspect skiers can't compare with.'

Na Na didn't understand how the barbaric situation was connected to skiers.

'Na Na, it's better if you go swimming with me. Think about it, swimming helps control your breathing and strengthen your waist muscles,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na was speechless. She couldn't believe Shi Dan Ping was petty to that extent... how could the heavens give such a petty person such a barbaric manhood?

Shi Dan Ping kissed the little rabbit's speechless lips. 'Also... there are different versions of buns to eat. Like a bun can be steamed, fried, or baked. I waited a long time to eat, how can I just eat once?'

Na Na didn't get a chance for the meaning of Shi Dan Ping's words to sink in before he ate her in a different body position.

End of Chapter Forty-One (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Forty-One (Part 2 of 2)

Na Yuan patiently waited a long time in the karaoke room, but uncle and his little aunt didn't come back to take him home. He jumped off the sofa and he ran to the door. He looked out in the hallway and he was disappointed he couldn't see uncle and his little aunt outside.

Liu Nan couldn't bear to see Na Yuan waited pointlessly. She walked to the door, she held Na Yuan's hand and they went to ask the restaurant floor manager if he saw a young tall man and a young little lady. The floor manager said he saw them exit the premises long ago.

Na Yuan cried pitifully because he was abandoned by uncle and his little aunt.

Chen Jie heard Na Yuan's loud cry and she ran outside the karaoke room. She hugged Na Yuan and she patted his back.

Na Yuan felt he was unwanted. Everyone hated him and left him. Even his little aunt who he thought loved him, didn't need him. He hugged aunty Chen's neck and he cried louder.

'Don't cry. Little Yuan is a good boy,' Chen Jie said.

'Little aunt doesn't need me... no one needs me,' Na Yuan said.

Chen Jie didn't know why Na Yuan didn't feel secure to that extent. She patted Na Yuan's back and her eyes silently asked Liu Nan what they should do about Na Yuan.

Liu Nan frowned. She took out her phone and she sighed. 'I can't believe little Ping and little Na! They only care about having fun together and they forgot all about little Yuan!'

Chen Jie sighed. 'Big sister Liu, are you planning to call them?'

'Do you have another suggestion?' Liu Nan asked.

Chen Jie shook her head. 'Big sister Liu, you're not scared of Doctor Shi... but you know his limits... if you ruin his critical moment... you know him well, don't

you think he'll retaliate?'

Liu Nan nodded her head and she put her phone back in her bag. 'You're right... I can't ruin a bad natured person's critical moment.'

Liu Nan pulled Na Yuan away from Chen Jie's embrace. Liu Nan squatted in front of Na Yuan and she spoke sternly. 'Little Yuan, you're a young man. You should cry less.'

Na Yuan's cry gradually subsided. He wiped his tears. 'Aunty Liu... is it because little aunt has uncle and she doesn't want me anymore?'

'What are you saying? Of course your little aunt needs a little uncle for you,' Liu Nan said.

Na Yuan shook his head. 'Granny Chen said... one day little aunt will have her own family. Little aunt will give birth to her own precious darling and little aunt can't stay with me-'

'Nonsense!' Liu Nan said. She rubbed Na Yuan's head and she spoke gently. 'Little Yuan, you're smart and loveable. Your little aunt wants to give you a little uncle... because she wants another person to love you too. Your little aunt and your little uncle will have their own precious darling, and you'll have a baby boy or baby girl cousin to play with.'

Na Yuan looked suspiciously at aunty Liu. 'Is it true? Little aunt and uncle do need me and they'll give me a baby boy or baby girl cousin for me to play with?'

'Of course!' Liu Nan said. She squeezed Na Yuan's chubby cheeks and she laughed. 'Right now your little aunt and little uncle are making a baby boy or baby girl cousin for you.'

Na Yuan understood and he nodded his head. 'Is that why they didn't take me with them? Ok, I understand. Aunty Liu, I'll be good and I'll wait for little aunt to come and take me home.'

Chen Jie covered her face with her hands. Heavens! How could Chen Jie trick a young child in that way? Didn't Chen Jie know it was too soon to promise Na Yuan a baby boy or baby girl cousin?

In contrast to the rain and wind outside the karaoke room... it was a spring

night inside Shi Dan Ping's bedroom.

Na Na straddled Shi Dan Ping's body for a long time. She was exhausted and she couldn't move her arms and legs anymore. Her chest collapsed on his chest and her head laid on his shoulder.

End of Chapter Forty-One (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Forty-Two

Chapter Forty-Two

Na Na saw the satisfied and dazed look on Shi Dan Ping's face, and she decided out of sight, out of mind was better than killing him. She leaned her body on his chest and she distracted herself with less murderous thoughts.

Shi Dan Ping was in an incredible good mood. He caressed the little rabbit's back and waist. He loved her soft and smooth skin and he didn't want to take his hands off her skin.

Na Na curled her body. She couldn't believe after she exhausted her body to death the whole night, she was rewarded with muscle cramps.

'What's wrong?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na ignored Shi Dan Ping's rare gentleness, because it was his fault her body was forced into many different sexual positions all night... to the point her thigh muscle cramps were unbearably painful. Her only regret was she couldn't scratch the satisfied look off Shi Dan Ping's face!

Shi Dan Ping understood why the little rabbit ignored him. 'Does it still hurt?'

Na Na was too angry for words, she closed her eyes.

Shi Dan Ping was worried, he sat up and spread the little rabbit's legs apart but she quickly closed her legs.

'Don't move. Let me see...' He patted her bottom, slowly opened her legs and he thoroughly checked between her legs. 'It's a bit swollen... is it really painful? Before it looked like it was pleasurable for you and I thought you didn't feel any pain.'

Na Na buried her head into a pillow. She was embarrassed and angry. She kicked the bed and she spoke sarcastically. 'Of course it's painful! If you were poked, prodded and probed all night, you would be in pain too!'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. 'Um, it must be painful... otherwise you wouldn't be brave enough to say that to me.'

Na Na laid motionless on the bed and she played dead.

Shi Dan Ping got off the bed. He lifted Na Na off the bed and she was scared for her life. 'What are you doing?'

Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit's body felt softer against his body. 'Carrying you to the bathtub. Warm water will lessen the pain and it'll help you stand tomorrow.'

In a bathtub of warm water the little rabbit's milky skin turned pink. Shi Dan Ping massaged her tensed body and he reluctantly stopped when her body relaxed.

Shi Dan Ping dried Na Na's body and he carried her back to the bed. On the bed she forced her sleepy eyes opened and she sighed. 'What are we going to do about little Yuan?'

Shi Dan Ping sighed and he kissed the little rabbit's forehead. He spoke gently. 'It's too late. It's likely head nurse Liu or someone else brought little Yuan back home with them for the night... tomorrow morning before work we'll go pick him up together, right now you need a peaceful sleep.'

Na Na's heart relaxed, she closed her eyes and she slept.

Shi Dan Ping stretched an arm and he switched off the light. He hugged the little rabbit to sleep. Before he slept his heart complained – 'The bed is too spacious without the little rascal!'

It was a beautiful night, but the following morning was a Monday. At six in the morning the alarm loudly woke up Na Na and Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na covered her ears. 'Who wants to die?' She was still sleepy and she sighed. 'I don't want to wake up.'

Shi Dan Ping got a headache from the loud noise, he stretched his arm and he turned off the alarm. Then he hugged the little rabbit. 'Let's sleep a bit more.'

The memories of last night slowly floated around Na Na's head. She sat upright. 'Ah!' She fell back on the bed. Her bones and muscles protested. Her back and waist were sorer than if she ran eight hundred metres.

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit. 'Why are you making a commotion early

in the morning?’

Na Na laid on Shi Dan Ping’s chest and she silently cursed in her heart... indeed a man’s attitude compared to before and after eating a woman was different! Immediately after a man ate a woman the man would turn his back on the woman... as if there was such thing as a good man!

Shi Dan Ping’s gentle attitude from last night disappeared in the morning. Last night he whispered many sweet words in Na Na’s ears, but after one night his gentle attitude turned to impatience. The more she thought about his changed attitude the more frustrated she was. She lifted his arm off her back and she got out of bed.

Na Na stood, covered her chest with her hand and she grabbed her clothes from the messy pile on the floor. Her movements were too loud and it woke up Shi Dan Ping again.

Shi Dan Ping pulled the little rabbit onto the bed and he tucked her under the bedsheet. ‘Na Na, what are you doing?’ He yawned and he got out of bed. ‘Na Na, sleep in a bit more. I’ll make breakfast and I’ll call you when it’s ready.’

Although Shi Dan Ping spoke roughly to Na Na, she felt there was fondness reserved for her under his roughness.

Na Na covered her face with the bedsheet and she peeked at Shi Dan Ping through a small gap between her eyes and the bedsheet. Her face flushed red and her heart pounded because she was in her pervert mode. She was surprised under his clothes was hidden eye candy. He was tall, a hard back, lean waist, long legs... he was meaty under his clothes!

Shi Dan Ping’s naked body made Na Na wide awake. Since he was in the bathroom, she quickly grabbed her clothes and she ran back to her room.

Shi Dan Ping brushed his teeth, washed his face and he changed into clean clothes. Afterward he made breakfast for himself and the little rabbit.

Na Na walked into the dining room when Shi Dan Ping put a plate of toast on the dining table. She still felt a little awkward in the morning. She glanced at him, she quickly lowered her head and she sat on a chair.

Shi Dan Ping smiled. ‘Na Na, you left something in the living room.’

‘Oh? What was it?’ Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping’s eyes shone with an evil gleam. ‘Your underwear.’

Na Na stood, pushed her chair out and she wanted to run to the living room.

‘Don’t go. I put your underwear in the washing machine already,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na’s face was bright red and she laughed awkwardly. ‘Hehe... is that so... thank you.’

Shi Dan Ping picked up a toast, he tore it into small pieces and he slowly fed the little rabbit. ‘You don’t need to be courteous with me.’

Na Na regretted she couldn’t throw the pieces of toast at Shi Dan Ping’s face. What was there to smile about? Wasn’t he worried about scaring someone to death early in the morning?

Shi Dan Ping didn’t teased the little rabbit whilst he ate his breakfast. ‘Na Na, pack a few things for little Yuan and we’ll go pick him up at the hospital.’

Na Na nodded her head. ‘Whose house did little Yuan sleep at last night?’

Shi Dan Ping stood and he put on his jacket. ‘I called head nurse Liu before. She said little Yuan slept at head nurse Chen’s house and that we can pick him up at the hospital. Then we can drop him off at childcare together.’

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na rushed to the hospital. When they arrived on the seventeenth floor of the hospital, Chen Jie and little Yuan sat in the staff room.

‘Little Yuan,’ Na Na called.

Na Na hugged little Yuan. She rubbed his head. She was about to explain about last night, but he lifted his head and he looked at her with anticipation in his eyes instead of resentment.

Na Yuan’s eyes shone brightly and he pulled his little aunt’s shirt. ‘Little aunt, where’s my baby girl cousin you and uncle made for me?’

Na Na was speechless.

Na Yuan didn’t realised he shocked his little aunt. His heart was only full of anticipation to meet his baby girl cousin. ‘Little aunt, where are you hiding my

baby girl cousin for me to play with?’

Na Na covered little Yuan’s mouth and she spoke in a choked voice. ‘Who told you that you have a baby girl cousin?’

Na Yuan used his strength to pull his little aunt’s hand away from his mouth. He looked at his little aunt suspiciously. ‘Don’t tell me, I have a baby boy cousin?’ He sighed. Although he was disappointed there was nothing he could do if uncle and his little aunt was going to give him a baby boy cousin. ‘Ok... I wanted a beautiful loveable baby girl cousin... but if my baby boy cousin listens to me, I’ll love him.’

‘Uncle wants to know... why does my child need to listen to you?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na was speechless. How was that the crucial part of little Yuan’s misunderstanding? She suspected Shi Dan Ping wasn’t a doctor. A doctor would know a baby wasn’t conceived and birthed after one night! If angels could hear her, she wanted them to take her away!

Na Na was nearly driven crazy by Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan. She was worried scarier nonsense would come out of Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan’s mouth. ‘Little Yuan, your class is about to start. Quickly come with me to childcare!’

‘But-’ Na Yuan said.

‘No but!’ Na Na said. She held little Yuan’s hand. ‘Let’s go or you’ll be late.’

Na Yuan frowned.

Shi Dan Ping smiled and he rubbed the little meatball’s head. ‘Little Yuan, don’t worry. You’ll have a baby boy and a baby girl cousin soon.’

Na Na was speechless.

‘Uncle is really good!’ Na Yuan praised.

Na Yuan laughed happily. He hugged uncle’s neck and he kissed uncle’s cheek. Then he glared at his little aunt and he scoffed.

Shi Dan Ping laughed loudly.

Na Na got a headache. She wanted to asked the heavens why they wanted to

bury her alive early in the morning through the naive Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan’s poisonous mouths... how was she supposed to survive the rest of the day?

End of Chapter Forty-Two

Related

part 1

Chapter Forty-Three (Part 1)

After Na Na dropped Na Yuan off at childcare, she returned to the staff room but the morning briefing was over.

Shi Dan Ping picked up a patient's file and he walked the little rabbit outside the staff room. 'Didn't I tell you to walk slowly? Why didn't you listen to me?'

The hair on the back of Na Na's neck rose, because Shi Dan Ping's gentle scold was too scary.

Shi Dan Ping smiled brightly and he spoke smoother than water. 'Last night I couldn't control myself, you've suffered... it's my fault.'

Na Na's face turned red from embarrassment. She glared at Shi Dan Ping. Her eyes telepathically scolded him – 'I'm not pregnant, you don't need to act like I'm pregnant! Aren't you scared your acting will choke you?'

Na Na ignored Shi Dan Ping. She turned around to walk away from Shi Dan Ping, but she was surprised to see Wei Zhexue who was holding a bag in front of her.

Wei Zhexue's body stiffened and he forced himself to smile. He gave the bag to Na Na. 'Yesterday you left this in my car.'

Na Na scratched her head and she accepted the bag. 'Thank you. You don't need to trouble yourself, you could have called me and I would come get it from you.'

Wei Zhexue smiled despairingly. It was no trouble for him to return Na Na's belongings, because it gave him an excuse to see her.

Shi Dan Ping pretended the stinky Wei Zhexue was invisible. Shi Dan Ping carried the little rabbit's bag for her and he adjusted her nursing cap. 'I need to go examine patients. Na Na, remember not to tire yourself out.'

'Ok, go see your patients!' Na Na said.

Na Na wanted Shi Dan Ping to disappear faster. His gentleness made her

nauseous, it was scarier than his usual sternness at work.

Shi Dan Ping reluctantly left the little rabbit alone with the stinky Wei Zhexue.

‘Each day is the same, I fear for my life. Work is tiring enough but I need to deal with him too,’ Na Na scolded lovingly.

Wei Zhexue sighed. ‘Na Na... have you thought...’

‘Huh? Thought about what?’ Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue shook his head. ‘It’s nothing... I should go back to work.’

Wei Zhexue turned around and he strode to the elevator. He regretted he didn’t seize all his opportunities. If he confessed it’d just make him suffer more.

Na Na didn’t understand why Wei Zhexue hesitated to ask his whole question. But Zhang Wei Dong was rostered to supervise the seventeenth floor and she needed to be extra alert at work.

Na Na was about to check what patients were assigned to her, but she was dragged by Liu Nan to the drugs storage room. ‘Head nurse Liu, what’s wrong?’

Liu Nan closed the door and she smiled cheekily. ‘Na Na take a seat. Last night... was Doctor Shi successful?’

Na Na was glad she was sitting. She blushed and she didn’t know how to answer Liu Nan’s question.

Liu Nan saw Na Na’s shy reaction and she knew little Ping scored. Liu Nan laughed mischievously.

‘Head nurse Liu!’ Na Na said.

Liu Nan patted Na Na’s shoulder. ‘It’s ok. Everyone’s an adult. There’s nothing to be shy about... how good was Shi Dan Ping?’

Na Na lowered her head. She couldn’t believe Liu Nan cornered her to that extent, she was speechless.

‘Don’t be petty. Share a little. All my children are big, there is barely anything I haven’t experienced,’ Liu Nan said.

‘That’s right! Head nurse Liu, all your children are big already. There’s nothing you don’t know so you don’t need to ask me anything,’ Na Na said.

‘Oh! It’s only been one night, but your mouth is very smooth! Indeed if you’re near ink, you’ll be black. Your attitude mirrors Shi Dan Ping,’ Liu Nan said teasingly.

Na Na lifted her head and she looked helplessly at Liu Nan. ‘Head nurse Liu, aren’t you in a hurry?’

‘Of course I’m in a hurry. So don’t delay me anymore. How was last night for you? Little Ping’s nose is pointed up all day... I suspect he is as cold in bed as he is at work. Sometimes looking at his smug face, I want to punch him,’ Liu Nan said.

Na Na was crazy to death. She felt her heart kowtowed to her feet. She suspected the seventeenth floor was actually the psychology floor. She believed she entered the wrong floor from the start.

Na Na covered her face of despair. She forced herself to open her mouth or Liu Nan wouldn’t let her off the hook. ‘What else can it be like? It was nothing special.’

Liu Nan wasn’t satisfied with Na Na’s answer. ‘Which one was it? Heaven or hell?’

Na Na racked her brain for a precise answer. ‘It was slow blood pressure.’

Na Na felt last night was barbaric, wicked and scandalous! In the morning she was embarrassed to see spots of her blood on the bedspread, which was her virginity’s farewell gift... it made her embarrassed to look straight at Shi Dan Ping.

Liu Nan thoroughly dissected Na Na’s precise words. Liu Nan’s eyes shone brightly, she laughed deviously and she opened the door to release Na Na.

Na Na didn’t understand why Liu Nan was excited by a few words. But she was happy she was released. She walked outside and she helped the other nurses on duty.

End of Chapter Forty-Three (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Forty-Three (Part 2 of 2)

On the way to the operating room, Shi Dan Ping felt there was something strange in the air.

The nurse rostered to assist Shi Dan Ping during the surgery was smiling slyly.

Shi Dan Ping changed into blue scrubs then he entered the operating room and he politely greeted his colleagues. But his colleagues greeted him with curious looks. He spoke coldly. 'What is it?'

The anaesthetist shook his head and he smiled slyly at Shi Dan Ping who was frowning.

Shi Dan Ping ignored his colleagues' strange looks and he checked if everything was prepared properly in the operating room.

Shi Dan Ping was satisfied all the surgical equipment and machines were properly sterilized.

The anaesthetist made minor adjustments to the anaesthetic machine. When he lifted his head, he exchanged secret glances with everyone except Shi Dan Ping. Together they smiled slyly in Shi Dan Ping's direction.

Shi Dan Ping narrowed his eyes, he suppressed his impatience and he focused on the surgery.

The surgery went smoothly. Shi Dan Ping pretended he didn't notice anything different about his colleagues. He calmly removed his gloves and washed his hands.

The nurse who was sterilizing the surgical equipment and machines after a surgery was startled when she heard a cough behind her.

Shi Dan Ping crossed his arms and he looked coldly at the nurse who looked like she was about to faint.

'Doctor Shi! Why didn't you go to-' the nurse said.

Shi Dan Ping smiled politely. 'I remembered I forgot something so I came back.'

Shi Dan Ping picked up a clean scalpel and combined with the cold look in his eyes it was a scary sight. He twirled the scalpel between his fingers.

‘Doctor Shi, that’s impressive,’ the nurse said in a shaky voice.

‘You praised me too much. If I’m not careful the scalpel can slip out of my hand and fly... into someone’s throat,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

The nurse choked out a laugh. ‘Doctor Shi, you sure know how to joke... hehe...’

Shi Dan Ping put the scalpel into the sink. ‘If there’s something I can’t figure out, I can be distracted... but don’t worry even if the scalpel flew into your throat... I can always insert another scalpel through your cricothyroid membrane to save your life.’

‘Doctor Shi if you can’t figure something out, please tell me and perhaps I can help,’ the nurse pleaded for mercy.

‘You’re a good girl. Tell me... what’s the rumour floating around? Why are everyone’s eyes suddenly focused on me?’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Nothing much. Just that everyone heard about... your slow blood pressure,’ the nurse said.

‘Slow blood pressure?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

‘Doctor Shi, I think your capability... can’t be small and slow. I think it’s someone who is jealous of you and they spread a rumour to smear your actual big capability-’ the nurse said.

Shi Dan Ping turned around and he strode outside the operating room, he was ready to assassinate someone.

Inside the operating room the nurse rubbed her chest and she comforted her scared heart. ‘Don’t be scared. The rumour must be true otherwise his embarrassment wouldn’t have turned to fury.’

Na Na finished her priority duties and she rested on a chair. But Shi Dan Ping suddenly appeared and he pulled her up from the chair. ‘What are you doing? My shift isn’t over yet.’

Shi Dan Ping dragged the little rabbit into the staff resting room. He slammed

the door shut and he locked the door.

Although there was still sunlight outside, the light wasn't turned on in the room and it made the atmosphere tenser.

Shi Dan Ping inched toward Na Na too calmly and she realised something was wrong... like he wanted to even the score with her, it wasn't a good feeling.

Na Na took two steps backward. She couldn't think of anything she did that offended him. She bravely puffed her chest. 'What do you want to do?'

'To do?' Shi Dan Ping asked. He laughed an evil laugh. 'I want to do you, to show you how capable I can be with a slow-blood-pressure!'

End of Chapter Forty-Three (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Forty-Four

Chapter Forty-Four

‘Why are you taking off your shirt?’ Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping stepped toward the little rabbit. She had plenty of soft and smooth skin, but her brain was a bit slow. Did she actually think she could hide in such a small room? She took two steps backward and she touched the foot of the bed where he was about to discipline her.

Shi Dan Ping tossed his shirt on the floor. It made Na Na’s head dizzy and she felt like her nose was going to bleed. She realised he was a fit swimmer. His stomach was toned, his waist was lean... she was disappointed his bottom half was hidden by blue pants.

‘There’s no rush. It’ll be pleasurable for you soon,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na smiled sweetly. ‘Doctor Shi, you had a tiring day. Why don’t I go home first and prepare a meal for you?’

Shi Dan Ping held the little rabbit’s shoulders. ‘No rush. Let me eat you first.’

‘You... you want to eat me here?’ Na Na asked.

Na Na couldn’t believe Shi Dan Ping publicly dragged her to the staff resting room. What would everyone think they were doing inside the room?

Shi Dan Ping took off the little rabbit’s nursing cap. ‘If I don’t eat you here... how is the rumour going to be squashed?’

Shi Dan Ping gently pushed Na Na back. She was preoccupied thinking about what rumour he meant that her feet tangled and she fell onto the bed. ‘Ah!’

The bed braced Na Na’s fall but it was an old hard bed and she hit her head on the hard bed.

Shi Dan Ping’s face paled. He quickly hugged the little rabbit. ‘Let me see your head.’

Na Na’s hands covered the back of her head and she refused to let go of her hands.

Shi Dan Ping pulled the little rabbit's hands away from her head and he gently rubbed her head. He felt a swollen bump.

'Ah! It hurts!' Na Na said and she cried.

Shi Dan Ping retrieved his hands, he didn't want to make the little rabbit's bump swell more. He gently blew on the bump on the little rabbit's head. 'How painful is it? Do you feel dizzy?'

Na Na secretly pinched her thigh and she cried louder. Her head did hurt, but she didn't think it would be painful as Shi Dan Ping eating her so soon after last night.

Shi Dan Ping panicked when he didn't hear the little rabbit answer his question. 'Do you remember what happened before you hit your head?'

Na Na bit her lips and she foolishly shook her head.

Shi Dan Ping suspected the little rabbit's head didn't hurt as much as he thought if she could shake her head. 'Before you hit your head, you were in a hurry to take off my clothes. I didn't want to then I accidentally used too much force to push you off me and you hit your head.'

'Nonsense! It was you who wanted to... force me to... you made me trip and I hit my head on the bed,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping laughed. 'Oh? You remembered?'

Na Na closed her mouth and she sat on the corner of the bed. She begged for mercy. 'Doctor Shi, I was wrong... but my head does hurt.'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. He walked to the fridge and he took out an ice pack for the little rabbit. He pressed the ice pack behind the little rabbit's head.

Na Na saw Shi Dan Ping's cheeks flushed pink and his chest slowly flushed pink. It warmed and calmed her heart.

Na Na bit her finger but it couldn't stop the joyful laughter from escaping her mouth. 'Doctor Shi, you're actually a good person.'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed, but he continued to press the ice pack behind the little rabbit's head. What was the little rabbit saying? Of course he was a good person!

Na Na blushed, her heart was overflowed with Shi Dan Ping's sweetness. She hugged him, she leaned her head on his naked chest and she kissed the left side of his chest. She felt his body trembled and she wanted to tease him more. She licked his chest and she felt his body trembled for longer.

Shi Dan Ping felt his lower body hardened. 'Does it still hurt?'

Na Na was caught up in her new discovery. She smiled and she spoke carelessly. 'A lot better.'

'Then it's good...' Shi Dan Ping said in a husky voice.

Na Na's back tensed and before she could react Shi Dan Ping's body pinned her body on the bed.

Shi Dan Ping sucked the little rabbit's neck and he kissed her lips. He was satisfied he heard the bed squeaked loudly. He fondled the little rabbit's body until she moaned and he reluctantly got off the bed. He took out clean blue scrubs from the closet and he changed out of his dirty pants.

Na Na laid on the bed for a while, because she didn't understand why Shi Dan Ping stopped half way. She felt a little insecure and she sat up on the bed. 'Why didn't you...'

Shi Dan Ping adjusted his clothes and he looked at the little rabbit. 'Na Na, do you want to continue?'

Na Na closed her mouth.

'The bed's too small. Our lunch break is too short. Even though I want to continue eating you, but you didn't eat lunch yet. How are you supposed to have enough energy to roll around the bed with me? Why aren't you leaving? Are you waiting for me to change my mind and eat you thoroughly?' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na didn't dare to argue with Shi Dan Ping in case he did changed his mind. She quickly got off the bed and she escaped.

Shi Dan Ping laughed. He was in a good mood... he made the bed messier.

The moment Na Na escaped outside the room, she saw Liu Nan stood waiting outside the door. 'Little Na, you're a dishonest little girl!'

'Huh? Why am I dishonest?' Na Na asked.

Liu Nan poked Na Na's head. 'You screamed loud enough for the ground floor to hear you... little Ping's capability is big and strong. Why did you lie to me and told me he has a slow blood pressure?'

Na Na was speechless.

Liu Nan expended a lot of energy to deliver hot gossip, but she didn't think the news she received was fake. She glared at Na Na. 'In the future you're not allowed to lie!'

Na Na wanted to protest. She didn't lie! The emphasis wasn't meant to be on slow, it was supposed to be on pressure! She wanted to express Shi Dan Ping's manhood was sharp and accurate... she understood why he wanted to show her the capability of someone with a 'slow blood pressure.' She realised why he wanted to evoke her loud cries. How was she supposed to explain the misunderstanding that nothing happened inside the room?

'Head nurse Liu, it's a misunderstanding... nothing happened-' Na Na said.

'Little girl! Why didn't you listen to me? You dare to lie in front of me?' Liu Nan said.

Another nurse passed Na Na a hand mirror. Na Na looked at her face in the mirror. Her hair was mess, her lips were swollen and wet... there was a hickey on her neck! Shi Dan Ping's real purpose was to squash the rumour!

Na Na couldn't bear the sly looks everyone around her gave her. She lowered her head and she buried her face in her hands.

By the end of lunch a new rumour about Shi Dan Ping's bed capabilities was spread around the hospital.

Amongst the senior medical staff, they knew of three different Dr Shi. Dr Shi senior was retired and the other two were young doctors at the hospital. In the past if they wanted to differentiate the two Dr Shi siblings, they either called them by their full names or nicknamed the older sibling 'big Dr Shi' and the younger sibling 'little Dr Shi.' But since the end of the most recent lunch, Shi Dan Ping's new nickname was 'Dr Shi big and strong.'

When Shi Dan An heard about her big brother's new nickname, she spat water from her mouth onto her computer screen.

Shi Dan An waited until her colleagues left her office before she called her dad. 'Old chief Shi! How's retired life treating you?'

Shi Dan An grabbed a tissue and she wiped her computer screen. 'If you're fit and free, you should pay more attention to your son. Your 'big and strong' son's name is infamous at the hospital... he sure is making you proud!'

Shi Dan Ping was still high from teasing the little rabbit when he received a phone call from his dad who thoroughly cursed him. He waited until the little rabbit left his office in a huff before he answered his dad. 'Ok dad. You just want to meet her. When I'm free I'll take her home to meet you.'

'You sly little boy! Don't try to fool me! I asked Doctor Zhang, he said you're free for the rest of the day. You better bring her home to meet me tonight or I'll hit you to death!' Shi Huai Ren said.

'If you have nothing else to say, I'm hanging up,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'What does the little girl like to eat? I'll prepare dishes she likes for tonight,' Shi Huai Ren said.

'My girlfriend is gentle and easy to take care of. Old man, you don't need to fuss too much,' Shi Dan Ping said and he hung up the phone.

Shi Dan Ping thought it was the right time to bring the little rabbit home... tonight was good timing.

End of Chapter Forty-Four

Related

Forty-Five

Chapter Forty-Five

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na ate lunch at home. He was about to ask her to meet his parents that night, but the phone rang. The childcare called to inform Na Yuan fought with another boy and Na Yuan was injured.

Na Na came out of the kitchen and she saw Shi Dan Ping looked anxious. 'Did the hospital call you?'

Shi Dan Ping shook his head. 'The childcare called. The little rascal fought with his friend-'

Na Na panicked. 'Little Yuan... is injured?'

Shi Dan Ping helped the little rabbit take off her apron. 'You don't need to worry. Young children fight all the time. Little Yuan will be ok. Let's go see him at the hospital.'

Na Na changed her shoes and she ran straight to the hospital.

Shi Dan Ping chased after the little rabbit and he caught up to her at the main entrance of the hospital. He hugged her and comforted her. 'Don't panic. I'm here for you and little Yuan.'

Na Na nodded her head and she leaned her body on Shi Dan Ping's body. 'It's my fault. I've been a lousy guardian.'

Na Na berated herself. She was busy with work, but outside of work she focused most of her attentions on Shi Dan Ping instead of taking better care of little Yuan. If something happened to little Yuan... how was she supposed to face Na Hao?

Shi Dan Pang led the little rabbit to the emergency department. When he saw his colleague he greeted his colleague, and he asked his colleague where Na Yuan was.

'You two don't need to despair. The little boy is ok. I'll take you two to see him,' a doctor said.

Na Yuan's clothes were dirty from top to bottom. His hair was messy and he kicked his little legs on a chair. But Na Na and Shi Dan Ping were relieved when they saw his complexion was healthy.

Na Yuan was eating a lollipop. He waved his hands when he saw uncle and his little aunt. 'Little aunt! Uncle!'

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little meatball and he checked for any injuries from the top of the little meatball's messy hair to his dirty shoes. He exhaled gently when he only saw a minor injury on the little meatball's right knee.

Na Na gently rubbed the bandage on little Yuan's right knee. 'Precious darling, does it hurt?'

Na Yuan puffed his chest. 'It doesn't hurt. I'm a young man, I'm not scared of pain.'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. He turned around and he asked his colleague to reassure him the little meatball was ok. 'Is he ok?'

'Doctor Shi, rest assure the little boy only scraped his right knee and there was no bleeding. His right knee was bandaged as a precautionary to avoid infection,' the doctor said.

Shi Dan Ping thanked his colleague. He put the little meatball down and he glared at the little meatball for giving him a scare. The little meatball hugged the little rabbit's leg.

Shi Dan Ping greeted the little meatball's preschool teacher who took the little meatball to the emergency department. 'Miss was it you that called us? I'm sorry we've been a nuisance. What happened at the childcare?'

'After lunch the children took a nap. Li Kuang was napping next to Na Yuan. Li Kuang woke up early and he disturbed Na Yuan's nap. They went to the toilet together to pee pee. Li Kuang wanted to be playful and he pee pee on Na Yuan. It's common for young children to be moody straight after a nap. Na Yuan didn't think Li Kuang was being playful. Na Yuan pushed Li Kuang and Li Kuang fell into the urinal... and they started fighting each other,' the preschool teacher explained.

Shi Dan Ping regretted he couldn't deal directly with the other little rascal who

dared to pee pee on the little meatball.

Na Na thought it was wrong of Li Kuang to pee pee on little Yuan. But she was also worried about Li Kuang. 'Where is little Yuan's friend? Is he injured?'

The preschool teacher sighed. 'Li Kuang only scraped his arm... but his clothes were drenched in urine so his parents took him home to change clothes.'

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na looked sternly at Na Yuan and Na Yuan innocently stared back at them.

'I'm really sorry. Tomorrow I'll bring little Yuan to the childcare and little Yuan will apologise to Li Kuang,' Na Na said.

'Why do I need to apologise to him? He pee pee on me first!' Na Yuan protested.

'Be quiet! It doesn't matter. Fighting is wrong! If your friend did something bad, you need to tell your teacher. Your teacher will help you and your friend reconcile. What did I tell you? You need to play nice with your friends. You injured your friend, of course you need to apologise,' Na Na said sternly.

Na Yuan couldn't believe his little aunt sided with Li Kuang. Na Yuan held back his tears pitifully.

Na Na's heart softened when she saw little Yuan looked sad. But she didn't want to encourage little Yuan to fight with his friends in the future, and she hardened her heart. 'Do you understand what you did was wrong?'

Na Yuan cried loudly. 'I wasn't wrong... little aunt is bad!'

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little meatball into his arms. The little meatball hugged his neck and cried on his shoulder. He gently patted the little meatball's back. 'Yes, you need to reason properly with young children. But the child who was wrong first wasn't little Yuan. The other child hasn't apologised yet, why do our little Yuan have to apologise first? Na Na, if you want to apologise to the other child then you can go on your own to apologise.'

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head to farewell the preschool teacher, and he carried the little meatball to the elevator.

Na Na's eyes and mouth were wide opened. She struggled to discipline little

Yuan sternly so she was angry with Shi Dan Ping, because he ruined her first attempt to discipline little Yuan.

Na Na apologised to the preschool teacher. Afterward Na Na went to look for Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan.

Shi Dan Ping carried the little meatball to the staff bathroom on the seventeenth floor. He bathed, dried the little meatball and he dressed the little meatball in his spare clean black shirt. Then he carried the little meatball to the staff resting room. He put the little meatball on the bed and he sat on a chair in front of the bed. 'It's useless to cry.'

'Little aunt scolded me-' Na Yuan said.

'It was right for your little aunt to scold you. When it is right for her to scold you then you need to listen to her. If it is wrong for her to scold her then let it flow into one ear and out the other ear,' Shi Dan Ping said. He squeezed the little meatball's cheeks that were puffed out. 'Do you think it's worth crying over a reason like this?'

Shi Dan Ping and Na Yuan didn't finish their talk when Na Na pushed the door opened. 'You shouldn't teach a child bad habits!'

'What bad habit did I teach little Yuan?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'Before I said a few stern words to little Yuan and you immediately undermined me. If I don't discipline little Yuan when he's fighting with his friends then when he's older he'll turn into an unruly thug. You should know right from wrong. You can't baby him when he does something wrong. He needs to understand fighting with his friends is wrong,' Na Na said.

'Na Na, it's you that should know right from wrong. If you scold him for standing up for himself then how is going to cope when he's older? Look at him, he cries over the slightest things like he's a weak little girl. This is what you're teaching him!' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na lost her temper. 'You shouldn't twist this situation! Of course you're carefree about his inner growth, because he's not your nephew. You're the one who is misguiding-'

Na Na saw the hurt look in Shi Dan Ping's eyes and she regretted what she

said. She panicked when she knew little Yuan was injured and her worries turned into anger so she said thoughtless hurtful words.

Shi Dan Ping stood and he spoke coldly. 'It appears I'm an outsider and I'm butting into someone else's business.'

Na Na wanted to explain, but Shi Dan Ping walked outside without looking back. She bit her lips and she sighed. Her whole body weakened and she sat on the bed next to little Yuan.

Shi Dan Ping's black shirt was baggy on Na Yuan and the sleeves drooped over Na Yuan's shoulders. He was sad to see uncle and his little aunt were fighting.

Na Na stroked little Yuan's hair. 'I'm sorry, I was bad. Don't be angry with me.'

Na Yuan's chubby hand patted his little aunt's thigh. 'Little aunt don't be angry. Tomorrow I'll apologise to Li Kuang.'

Na Na hugged little Yuan. She loved little Yuan since he was born and it hurt her whenever she saw him in pain.

Na Yuan kissed his little aunt's cheek. 'Little aunt don't be sad. If you want in the future when we go out to play we won't let uncle come out to play with us.'

'Uncle... he just wants to help you grow,' Na Na said.

'Mmm... ok, we can bring uncle out to play with us. I know little aunt really loves uncle,' Na Yuan said.

'Stinky little rascal!' Na Na said.

'I'm not stinky. Uncle bathed me already,' Na Yuan said.

Na Na laughed and she kissed little Yuan's cheek. 'Little Yuan be good and go find uncle while I go home to get your clothes, ok?'

Na Yuan sighed. 'Adults are complicated. Little aunt and uncle are troublesome. Each time you and uncle fight, it's always me who has to help you and uncle make up.'

End of Chapter Forty-Five

Related

part 1

Chapter Forty-Six (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping reviewed a medical report in his office, but he couldn't absorb anything.

Na Yuan knocked on uncle's office door. He poked his little head into uncle's office. Then he turned around and he saw his little aunt smiled and waved before she walked home to get his clothes.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little meatball and he scoffed. He picked up a pen and he pretended he didn't see the little meatball.

Na Yuan sighed. He thought adults were troublesome. He ran to uncle and he smiled sweetly. 'Uncle, what are you doing?'

Shi Dan Ping looked at the little meatball's round face and round eyes. Little meatball was innocent and loveable as the little meatball's heartless little aunt so he ignored the little meatball.

Na Yuan wasn't scared of uncle. He put up his chubby little arms to gesture for uncle to hug him.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. He lifted the little meatball onto his lap and he hugged the little meatball. 'What is it?'

Na Yuan moved his bottom until he found a comfortable spot on uncle's lap. He lifted his head and he laughed happily. 'Uncle, you don't need to be angry. Little aunt knows she was wrong.'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. If the little rabbit knew she was wrong she should apologise to him in person instead of ordering the little rascal to apologise for her. She wasn't sincere!

'Uncle, if you're still angry then sleep on the same bed with little aunt. Uncle and little aunt will make up in bed together,' Na Yuan said.

'Did you little aunt say that?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Yuan nodded his head. 'Yes, and little aunt asked me to help her say she's

really sorry to uncle.'

'Your little aunt is too confident about her appeal like uncle hasn't seen her before. Even if your little aunt bathed and laid on uncle's bed, she shouldn't think uncle will let it go,' Shi Dan Ping denied.

Shi Dan Ping's mouth wasn't as harsh as his body was stiff. If the little rabbit's attitude was sincere and she admitted she was wrong then she would bathe and lay on his bed... she would let him bite her anywhere and eat her in any position... he didn't know how many times he should eat her to be enough to soothe him.

Na Yuan didn't know why he only said sorry for little aunt, but uncle said a lot of weird words he didn't understand.

Na Yuan didn't get to open his mouth to ask uncle, because a lady who was crying suddenly barged into uncle's office.

'Doctor Shi, I'm begging you to find a different solution... money is not a problem. I don't care how expensive treatments are. I'm begging you to find-' a patient's mum pleaded.

Shi Dan Ping frowned. He stood in front of his patient's mum and he hugged the little meatball tightly. 'I'm really sorry. I've explained it to you and your family, it's not that I don't want to provide treatments for your son, but there's no other solution... the earlier he's transferred to Lam Hai, perhaps your son's condition can improve.'

Shi Dan Ping empathised with his patient's mum. His patient was her only child. Her son fell on his head, it was a hard surgery for him and his colleagues to keep her son alive but her son was in a vegetable state.

Shi Dan Ping suggested his patient's family to transfer his patient to Lam Hai, because he wanted to give his patient's family closure and let them decide if they wanted to let his patient pass away or keep his patient alive at Lam Hai.

'Doctor Shi, I only have one child. Tell me how I'm supposed to let my son... he's still young...' a patient's mum said. Her eyes stared at Na Yuan who was protected by Dr Shi. 'Doctor Shi, you have a young child too... how can a silver head farewell a green head? This is like asking for my whole life to be taken

away! I'm begging you to find a different solution.'

Na Yuan pulled uncle's shirt collar and he spoke softly. 'Uncle, the lady is really pitiful. Does the lady's son want to go to Lam Hai too?'

Shi Dan Ping stroked the little meatball's hair. 'Um.'

Na Yuan turned his head around and he stretched a chubby little hand to wipe the lady's tears off her face. 'Aunty, don't cry anymore. My daddy is staying at Lam Hai too. My daddy and your son can be friends! After my daddy and your son have a good rest they'll come back home.'

Na Yuan's soft voice and soft hand that wiped the lady's tears shredded the lady's heart more and she cried despairingly.

Shi Dan Ping didn't notice his patient's mum cry was louder. He was too shocked and his heart tightened. He carried the little meatball passed his patient's mum and outside his office.

Na Yuan leaned his chin on uncle's shoulder and he waved a chubby little hand to farewell the lady.

Shi Dan Ping carried the little meatball to the staff resting room. He put the little meatball down onto the bed. His complex eyes silently looked at the little meatball's face.

Na Yuan felt uncle was in a strange mood and he spoke softly. 'Uncle, what's wrong?'

'Your daddy... why is he staying at Lam Hai?' Shi Dan Ping asked in a choked voice.

Na Yuan felt sad thinking about his daddy. 'Daddy drove mummy, grandpa and grandma to a faraway place. Little aunt said daddy drove a long way and he was very tired. Little aunt also said daddy needs to sleep for a long time before daddy will wake up again.'

Shi Dan Ping felt something squeezed his heart. He didn't know if he was angry or heartbroken. 'Your daddy when did he... start his long sleep?'

'Daddy started sleeping a long time ago, I don't know... daddy is very lazy! Daddy doesn't want to wake up to take me out to play,' Na Yuan said.

End of Chapter Forty-Six (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Forty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Dan Ping laughed at himself. He realised there was no such thing as a coincidence in life. The little rabbit had an ulterior motive from the start.

Shi Dan Ping heart was lit on fire. It wasn't the first time he was deceived, but it was the first time he wanted to explode after being deceived.

Shi Dan Ping did suspect the little rabbit appearing into his life was too good to be true. But he just wanted to believe something happened to her family and she had no choice but to raise the little meatball on her own. He didn't want her to be sad thinking about her family so he never broached the topic about her family in front of her.

Shi Dan Ping foolishly thought he finally found someone who willingly accepted his flaws, who empathised with him and understood his vulnerabilities... that the little rabbit understood his heart. Whether his future was short or long, she would always be there day and night to be his companion... and he wouldn't be left alone in the cold shadows of the night... but everything was his wishful thinking.

Shi Dan Ping berated himself. Why didn't he see earlier that it was just him in a one sided love. It didn't matter he and the little rabbit had an intimate relationship and he wanted to bring her home to meet his family, because she saw him as an outsider.

Na Na carried a bag of little Yuan's clothes to the hospital's seventeenth floor. She walked passed the staff resting room and she saw Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan were sitting on a bed. She walked into the room and she felt Shi Dan Ping was strangely different than usual. 'There's another twenty minutes until the afternoon shift. Doctor Shi do you want to rest for a bit?'

Na Yuan took out his clothes from the bag his little aunt was holding. 'Little aunt, help me change my clothes.'

Na Na laughed and she squeezed little Yuan's cheeks. She carried little Yuan to

a corner of the room and she helped him changed his clothes.

‘Little Yuan, did you tell uncle what I asked you to tell him?’ Na Yuan asked softly.

Na Yuan puffed his chest and he nodded his head.

Na Na exhaled gently and she helped little Yuan put on his shoes. She hugged little Yuan and she patted his bottom. ‘Don’t run outside to the elevator. Go to the staff room and wait for me a bit. Later I’ll take you back to the childcare.’

Na Yuan ran outside to play with the aunties he knew.

Na Na turned to face Shi Dan Ping, he stood at a far distance from her and she felt he was furious with her. She summoned her courage to open her mouth. ‘Doctor Shi, I’m really sorry... I wasn’t in the right frame of mind before and I said a lot of nonsense. I know you treat little Yuan and me good... and you love little Yuan-’

‘You haven’t talked about little Yuan’s parents... where are his parents?’ Shi Dan Ping asked abruptly.

Na Na was taken back by the way Shi Dan Ping asked about little Yuan’s parents out of the blue. She spoke in a choked voice. ‘An unexpected bad situation happened-’

‘Is little Yuan’s daddy at Lam Hai? Yes or no?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na’s face paled, she bit her lips and she nodded her head.

‘More than a year ago, my big brother drove my sister-in-law and her parents... that day there was a storm and the roads were slippery... only my big brother was saved by someone in time...’ Na Na said softly.

It was the most traumatic memory inside Na Na’s mind. She felt it was a painful nightmare. She didn’t think Shi Dan Ping would stab her wound and demand her to rip her wound off in front of him... her body sat limp on the bed.

It was painful for Shi Dan Ping to see the little rabbit relive a painful memory. He closed his eyes and he forced himself to open his mouth. ‘You knew who I was since the start... you got close to me, because you wanted me to save your big brother, right?’

Na Na's heart was in chaos. She lost almost all her close relatives. 'It was reported during the car accident my big brother embraced my sister-in-law, he wanted to protect her life... an electric pole fell onto the roof of his car and a piece of steel pierced through his head. Many doctors said there was no solution to take it out... I knew Doctor Shi senior was the chief of this hospital and he was one of the best neurosurgeons in the country... but after I accepted a nursing job at this hospital and I came to work here... I found out Doctor Shi senior retired due to injury-'

Shi Dan Ping understood, he lowered his head and he laughed bitterly. 'Then you thought about his son who was a neurosurgeon too, right? That's why you-'

'Doctor Shi, you're his last hope... little Yuan can't lose his daddy too,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping lifted his head and he spoke coldly. 'Why didn't you tell me your motive since the start?'

Shi Dan Ping thought the little rabbit's patience, the way she looked after him and cared about him unconditionally... it was simply because she prioritised her big brother's life and she wanted him to save her big brother. If he couldn't trust her... then in the world was there anyone else he could trust?

Na Na lifted her head. She didn't know how she could ask a stranger to save her big brother. If she didn't get to know Shi Dan Ping then he wouldn't consider her request if she asked him at the start when they were strangers.

Shi Dan Ping looked at the little rabbit like he wanted to break her heart. 'To save your big brother, you were willing to go to any lengths! If you told me your motive from the start, I could have told you whether I could help save your big brother or not... but you chose this deceitful method! You pretended you were innocent and kind, you even had me fooled! Your tenacity is strong, for your big brother you're willing to sell yourself! Didn't you think using such a method to get close to me would repulse me? I just need to think about our intimate relationship and it makes me regret I can't soak my body into a tub of glutaraldehyde (glutaraldehyde in liquid form is used to sterilise medical equipment)! What makes you think I will try to help save your brother now?'

'You... you-' Na Na said weakly.

Shi Dan Ping was determined to break up with the little rabbit. He turned around and he stepped toward the door. 'From this moment onwards, our relationship is over. We have no relation with each other. Hurry up and disappear!'

Na Na panicked, she wanted to stop Shi Dan Ping from leaving. In her rush to hold him back, she stood too quickly and her foot tripped. She fell and her head hit the bed. She cried out and tears flowed down her cheeks... she wanted to tell him she truly loved him.

Shi Dan Ping's legs stopped moving when he heard the little rabbit cried out, but he refused to turn back and he walked away.

Na Na held her head steady. She didn't understand why Shi Dan Ping ended their relationship.

Na Na heard footsteps and she lifted her head. It wasn't Shi Dan Ping, it was Liu Nan. She wiped tears off her face and she lowered her head like a helpless lost child. 'Head nurse Liu...'

Liu Nan sighed and she rubbed Na Na's head. 'Foolish little girl, why didn't you say anything before... if you told us earlier, we could have helped you.'

Na Na's nose stung and she silently cried.

'Don't worry, everything will be ok,' Liu Nan said.

Liu Nan thought about what little Ping said in anger before and she scoffed. 'Little Ping's brain is having an allergic reaction. Na Na don't care about him anymore! That unruly little Ping's brain was swollen with coldness long ago! He's been immune to life and death situations years ago. Does he even have empathy left?'

Na Na sniffed snot back into her nose and she spoke softly. 'Head nurse Liu, don't say that about him... he just misunderstood the situation-'

Liu Nan hit Na Na's back to knock common sense into Na Na. 'What are you doing defending him after the harsh words he said to you? Listen to me, you can't excessively dote on a man or he'll take you for granted, stop respecting you and look down on you!'

Na Na shook her head. ‘Doctor Shi is a good person. I just need to explain the situation properly to him and it’ll be ok.’

Liu Nan looked helplessly at Na Na. Liu Nan didn’t understand how little Ping was able to wrap Na Na around his finger to that extent.

Na Na looked at Liu Nan with hopeful eyes. ‘Head nurse Liu, don’t worry. Firstly, I’ll go take little Yuan back to childcare. Afterward I’ll come back here and find a good opportunity to explain the situation properly to Doctor Shi.’

Liu Nan watched the foolish Na Na run outside the room and Liu Nan sighed helplessly.

End of Chapter Forty-Six (Part 2 of 2)

Related

part 1

Chapter Forty-Seven (Part One)

Shi Dan Ping examined a patient's scans. He didn't need to be at work, but he wanted to keep his mind busy with work. He failed to distract his mind. He took off his glasses and put it on a desk then he massaged his temples.

'Doctor Shi...' Na Na called.

Shi Dan Ping was startled. He glared at the little rabbit. 'What are you doing here?'

Na Na bit her lips and she spoke softly. 'Doctor Shi, are you still angry at me?'

Shi Dan Ping laughed coldly. 'What do you think?'

Shi Dan Ping was composed until he saw the little rabbit and he remembered how she heartlessly used him.

Na Na stepped toward Shi Dan Ping, she lowered her head and she apologised. 'I'm really sorry, I know I was wrong... what do you want me to do so you won't be angry at me anymore?'

'I'm not angry anymore...' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na exhaled gently and she smiled.

'It's not worth for me to be angry at a deceitful person. What are you doing appearing in front of me? There is nothing between us,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na's joy was short lived. 'But I-'

'Don't say anything else!' Shi Dan Ping said. He put on his glasses and he spoke sternly. 'I don't want to hear your explanation!'

Na Na clasped her hands and she summoned her courage. No matter what happened she was determined to tell Shi Dan Ping how she felt. 'I understand trust is important in a relationship. It was wrong of me not to tell you about my big brother. But I didn't purposely hide it from you. I was scared... I'm really sorry, I was wrong. I should have told you sooner. I... I truly love you.'

Na Na was scared to tell Shi Dan Ping about her big brother, because she was scared her last hope to save her big brother would vaporise... the more she wanted to hang onto her last hope the more scared she was.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't control his heart from pounding faster, but the little rabbit's weak love declaration fuelled his anger. 'Is that so? I'm sorry, I don't love you. I didn't have any plans to be with you long term.'

Na Na lifted her head, she didn't believe what she heard and she looked at Shi Dan Ping. Her head spun and she spoke softly. 'But... we...'

Shi Dan Ping looked at the computer screen and he spoke coldly. 'Oh. We're both adults. It's common for a man and a woman to consent to be intimate with each other... you used your body as an incentive for me to save your big brother. It shows being intimate with someone isn't something significant to you.'

Na Na was speechless for a long time before she spoke in a choked voice. 'I understand. Doctor Shi... I'm sorry I made wrong assumptions about us. Don't worry, in the future I won't bother you anymore.'

Na Na was heartbroken, she turned around and she accidentally ran into a trolley. But she pushed the trolley aside and she ran faraway from Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping sat in front of the computer screen for a long time. He couldn't hold back his rage anymore, he picked up the mouse and he smashed the mouse against the wall.

Shi Dan Ping laughed at his pathetic self. Did the little rabbit love him? She declared her love in such an unconvincing manner! He was petty and he wanted to take a little revenge on her for manipulating his feelings to achieve her hidden agenda. If she loved him, how could she give up so easily and left him without hesitation?

Shi Dan Ping slammed the desk. He stood, kicked the chair and he left the hospital in a turmoil state of mind.

Later that afternoon Shi Huai Ren heard the doorbell rang, and he rushed to the door. He was excited to meet his future daughter-in-law. He opened the door and he was disappointed only his son stood at the door. 'Where is she?'

'Who is there to see? She and I were just together a couple of days and I felt

we won't compatible-' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Huai Ren threw a pot of dirty water at his rotten son. 'You've known a household's good daughter for a couple of days and you took her to bed? You scum! Don't think I don't know what a rotten little boy you! It's likely she couldn't put up with your stinky personality!'

Shi Dan Ping walked into his parents' home, he grabbed tissues and he wiped the dirty water off his face. 'Think about the era you're living in. If I married every girl before taking her to bed then I would have a harem of consorts by now.'

'Shut your filthy mouth! You still dare to talk? With your capability? You expect you can handle three thousand beautiful consorts? Are you confident enough to risk your right hand to say you can handle a harem?' Shi Huai Ren said sarcastically.

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. He suspected his dad wasn't his biological dad by the way his dad looked down at his capability.

Shi Huai Ren laughed mockingly at his son. 'Go wash up and dry yourself under sunlight... if the little girl thinks you're an eyesore-'

'What do you mean I'm an eyesore? It's her that's an eyesore!' Shi Dan Ping denied.

'Ok, then tonight, you can eat leftovers in fridge,' Shi Huai Ren said.

Shi Dan Ping realised he was adopted!

End of Chapter Forty-Seven (Part One)

Related

part 2

Chapter Forty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

After Na Na's work shift she picked up Na Yuan from childcare.

'Where's uncle?' Na Yuan asked.

Na Na rubbed little Yuan's head and she forced herself to smile. 'Uncle is busy... let's go home.'

Na Yuan pulled his little aunt's shirt sleeve. 'Little aunt, are you and uncle fighting with each other?'

Na Na sighed and she kept silent.

'Uncle is too petty! I made up with Li Kuang already,' Na Yuan said.

'Little Yuan is a good child!' Na Na praised.

Na Yuan puffed his chest and he walked home with his little aunt.

After Na Na cooked dinner she wanted to wait to see if Shi Dan Ping would come home, but little Yuan's stomach rumbled so she let little Yuan eat first.

Na Yuan was happy his little aunt fed him dinner. But after he was full he noticed his little aunt was sad. 'Little aunt, why are you sad?'

Na Na shook her head. 'I'm not sad.'

'I know little aunt is sad. Did uncle tease you?' Na Yuan said.

Na Na felt like her brain was boiled and she couldn't say another word.

At ten in the evening, Shi Dan Ping didn't come home. Na Na understood he didn't want to see her.

Na Yuan was sleepy, his head tilted left and right. His little aunt carried him to his room. 'Little aunt, why aren't we sleeping on uncle's bed? We can't let uncle sleep on his own.'

Na Na's eyes stung. She kissed little Yuan's cheek. 'I'm really sorry... I'm useless. We just moved houses... I'm sorry...'

Na Na bit her lips when little Yuan fell asleep. Little Yuan pouted his lips and he dribbled saliva in his sleep.

Na Na felt Shi Dan Ping's home was too big when he was missing. She sat at the dining table for a long time. Shi Dan Ping didn't come home that night and she dumped the cold dinner into the rubbish bin.

Since Na Na and little Yuan moved into Shi Dan Ping's home, Shi Dan Ping amended their work shifts so that one of them would always be home at night to look after little Yuan. That night wasn't the first time she was home without Shi Dan Ping, but it was the first time she felt sad because Shi Dan Ping wasn't home.

Na Na felt the happiest living with Shi Dan Ping and little Yuan since the car accident. It didn't matter if she and Shi Dan Ping argued or if he teased her, she was happy living with him and little Yuan.

Na Na laid on Shi Dan Ping's bed, she waited for him to come home but she cried alone in the middle of the dark night. Their happy days together were short, but when she thought about happy memories of them together she felt it was a long time. It was insignificant memories to him, but they were significant memories in her heart. Even if she didn't want to remember them, it was hard for her to forget.

Na Na used up all her courage to confess she loved Shi Dan Ping, but he stomped on her heart. It was wishful thinking on her part. He was rich and a young handsome genius... he was out of her league. She deluded herself to assume he was good to her because he loved her... but she truly loved him and she didn't know how to stop loving him.

Na Na grew up watching her dad love and dote on her mum. Then her big brother married her sister-in-law and she saw how her big brother also loved and doted on her sister-in-law. She wanted to meet and love someone like her dad and her big brother.

Na Na knew from the start Shi Dan Ping didn't treat her like her dad and her big brother treated her mum and her sister-in-law. Shi Dan Ping was petty, he owned a poisonous mouth, he was bad natured and sometimes his teasing made her cry... he wasn't her ideal lover.

Na Na didn't know why she loved Shi Dan Ping. The more time she spent together with him the more she loved him. She couldn't escape her feelings even if he didn't reciprocate her feelings.

Na Na thought behind Shi Dan Ping's coldness was warmth reserved for her. If he said harsh words to her, he would make up with her and she couldn't stop her heart from beating for him.

Na Na buried her face into a pillow. Everything in the room smelt like Shi Dan Ping. But she realised he was never going to hug her during the night again.

In the morning Na Na opened her eyes and she didn't know when she slept last night. She felt all the recent good memories were just part of a beautiful dream and she felt it was time for her wake up from the beautiful dream.

Na Na got out of bed and she packed hers and little Yuan's belongings.

Na Na moved into Shi Dan Ping's home with two small suitcases, but she was leaving with two small suitcases and a big bag of items Shi Dan Ping bought for little Yuan. Shi Dan Ping bought items like a toothbrush, toothpaste, cup, towel with cartoon designs and toys for little Yuan.

After Na Na finished packing she took out her phone and she called Liu Nan. Na Na requested work leave and Liu Nan approved her work leave.

The following week Na Na was going to be rotated to another department at the hospital. Since she and little Yuan were moving out of Shi Dan Ping's home there was no reason left for her to see Shi Dan Ping. She granted his last wish, she wasn't going to bother him anymore.

Na Na couldn't think of anywhere else to stay for a short period except for her old home with Mao Dan. It wasn't suitable a home for little Yuan so she was determined to quickly find a good place for her and little Yuan to live together.

End of Chapter Forty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Forty-Eight

Chapter Forty-Eight

Shi Huai Ren woke up his son before sunrise and he forced his son to exercise.

Shi Dan Ping grudgingly exercised then he ate the congee his dad bought from a nearby restaurant. He thought the congee tasted flavourless. He missed the little rabbit's cooking and the way she fussed over him at breakfast. He realised a home needed a woman's touch.

After breakfast Shi Huai Ren escorted his son to the front door. 'Reconcile with the little girl. At your age it's hard for you to meet someone who is willing to put up with your bad nature.'

Shi Dan Ping walked outside and he slammed the door behind him.

Shi Dan Ping drove to the hospital. At the hospital he bought a cup of coffee, and he added many packets of sugar but he felt the coffee still tasted bitter. He missed the coffee the little rabbit made for him in the mornings.

Shi Dan Ping threw his cup of coffee in a bin and he walked to the staff changing room to look for the little rabbit.

'Oh, Doctor Shi your legs are healthy so you can quickly walk away! This is the changing room for female nurses. You're old enough to know it's wrong to be a peeping tom!' Liu Nan said.

Shi Dan Ping looked at the clock on a wall. 'Head nurse Liu has everyone arrived for the morning briefing?'

Liu Nan scoffed. 'Everyone is here.'

Shi Dan Ping coughed, he glanced inside the changing room but the little rabbit wasn't inside. He turned around and he walked to the staff room.

After the morning briefing Shi Dan Ping still didn't see any signs of the little rabbit. He called her phone and the home phone but no one picked up. He couldn't stand not knowing where she was and he resorted to asking Liu Nan.

'Where is she?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

‘Who? Doctor Shi you need to be more specific, who are you looking for?’ Liu Nan asked.

Shi Dan Ping gritted his teeth and he held back his temper. ‘Where is Na Na? Why isn’t she at work?’

Liu Nan crossed her arms and she laughed coldly. ‘Little Ping you’re always this hot headed. You like to bully the people you love the most. Day after day you talk with a stinky mouth and you walk around with a cold attitude. Anyone that sees you would want to hit you. Do you think all the females in this world are like your mother, always there to dote on you? Who do you think you are? Na Na is a good girl, she doesn’t owe you anything but why do you expect her to unconditionally put up with your bad nature? You should be on your knees crying grateful tears you met an angel like Na Na who loves you. You took her love for granted, you deserve to be dumped!’

Shi Dan Ping’s mood soured. He couldn’t believe early in the morning he was lectured by his dad and at work he was lectured by Liu Nan!

‘Do you know why you can’t refute what I said to you? Because you know it’s the truth. Now that she’s gone, you realise you were too irrational. Serves you right, in the future it’ll just be you who will be crying,’ Liu Nan said.

Shi Dan Ping nearly suffocated to death, because unspoken words choked him. He took a deep breath then he turned around and he strode to Zhang Wei Dong’s office.

‘Little Ping, what’s wrong?’ Zhang Wei Dong asked.

‘I want you to authorise for me to perform a second surgery for a patient who was supposed to be transferring to Lam Hai,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Little Ping, wanting to challenge your surgical skills is a good thing... but you can’t act recklessly! I have examined your patient’s body condition myself, and it’s too risky to perform a second surgery on him. You’re only prolonging his family’s false hopes,’ Zhang Wei Dong said.

‘If anything happens, I’m prepared to take sole responsibility,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘You think you taking sole responsibility will be enough? If anything happens,

it'll be me and the hospital who will be held responsible!' Zhang Wei Dong said.

'Doctor Zhang, I remember you once told me a doctor's first duty is to save patients that can be saved. You also said it's wrong for a doctor to think only about themselves first at the expense of a patient's life,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Zhang Wei Dong sighed. 'Little Ping, you know a doctor can only treat symptoms but a doctor can't change a severely injured patient's inevitable death.'

'The patient's family consented for a second surgery and they understand the likely outcome of the second surgery... Doctor Zhang, I remember when my dad mentored you there were many risky surgeries you wanted to perform, because you believed the patients can be saved and my dad supported your decisions,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'It's true the old chief Shi gave me many opportunities to perform risky surgeries... but back then was a different time. There were less health regulations and cases of patients suing doctors were rare... but what you said is also reasonable. I should give you a chance to challenge your surgical skills and support you like how the old chief Shi believed in my surgical skills,' Zhang Wei Dong said.

'Uncle Zhang, are you authorising the second surgery?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'How can I not authorise? The patient's family consented to a second surgery already, and I don't want the old chief Shi to think he mentored a hypocritical doctor like me who doesn't practice what I preach,' Zhang Wei Dong said.

'Thank you uncle Zhang!' Shi Dan Ping said.

Nearby Zhang Wei Dong's office, Na Na carried hers and little Yuan's suitcases upstairs to her old home. It was a hot day and her whole body was sweaty.

Na Na arrived at her floor and she was shocked to see Wei Zhexue was standing in front of her old home. 'Wei Zhexue, why aren't you at work?'

Wei Zhexue glanced at the suitcases Na Na was carrying and he frowned. 'You're moving back here?'

Na Na nodded her head. 'I can't overstay at someone else's house for too long

or I'll wear out their hospitality.'

'Shi Dan Ping kicked you out of his house?' Wei Zhexue asked.

Na Na shook her head, but Wei Zhexue knew she was lying to him to protect Shi Dan Ping. He sighed and he rubbed her head. 'Don't worry, one day Shi Dan Ping will get what's coming to him.'

Na Na forced herself to smile and she wanted to divert Wei Zhexue's attention. 'My arms are about to fall off. Can you help me carry these suitcases inside?'

Wei Zhexue was happy to oblige and he carried Na Na's suitcases inside her home. He remembered the stench of the tenants' public bathroom facilities on the ground floor, and the sightings of cockroaches and mice as he walked upstairs to Na Na's floor.

'Na Na, you actually want to live here with little Yuan?' Wei Zhexue asked.

Na Na cleared the clutter off the sofa for Wei Zhexue to sit. 'It's only temporary. Once I find a suitable place, little Yuan and I will move out of here.'

Wei Zhexue sat on the sofa. 'This isn't a place fit for humans to live in. You and little Yuan should come to my house and both of you can stay as long as you want. It isn't spacious, but it's clean and suitable for you and little Yuan to live in. It's close to the hospital too.'

Na Na shook her head. 'I don't want to inconvenience you. Besides, we're only staying here for a few days.'

'Na Na! Why do you need to refuse my help? If you see me as your friend then you don't need to be courteous with me. I don't think it's an inconvenience for you and little Yuan to live with me,' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na took a deep breath. 'Wei Zhexue, you're a good person. I'm grateful for everything you have done for me and little Yuan... I don't want to rely on another person's hospitality. I know you won't suddenly kick me and little Yuan out of your home... but you don't know how it feels to be kicked out of someone's home. I don't feel secure living in someone else's home... I'll always be anxious that I'll overstay my welcome...' She grimaced because she thought about Shi Dan Ping's cruel parting words to her and how she waited in vain for him to reconsider about ending their relationship. 'I need to think about little Yuan too.'

I need to give him a stable environment. I don't want him to feel unwanted.'

Wei Zhexue was heartbroken to see the look of despair on Na Na's face. 'It was me that was a step too slow...'

End of Chapter Forty-Eight

Related

Forty-Nine

Chapter Forty-Nine

Wei Zhexue regretted he didn't pursue Na Na earlier. If he did then he wouldn't be easily defeated by Shi Dan Ping.

'Huh? What did you say?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue shook his head and he stood. 'I'll help you look for suitable places to live. Call me if you need anything.'

'Thank you Wei Zhexue! You should hurry and go back to work. I need to stay here and clean before I pick up little Yuan from childcare.'

Wei Zhexue reluctantly left Na Na's home.

Na Na washed hers and little Yuan's clothes, bedsheets and pillow cases. Then she hung them on the balcony to dry under the sunlight.

In the afternoon Na Na was cleaning her home, and she was startled when she heard a knock on the front door. She opened the door and she was shocked to see Shi Dan An. 'Doctor Shi, what are you doing here?'

Shi Dan An walked inside Na Na's home. 'I came to find you.'

Na Na waited for a while for her heart to stop beating false hopes. 'Doctor Shi, take a seat. What can I do for you?'

Shi Dan An sat on the sofa. 'There's someone who wants to see you and he sent me to be your escort. I'm unhappy to be used as his servant, but his request was unexpected so I obliged.'

'Who wants to see me?' Na Na asked.

Shi Dan An stood. 'Follow me and you'll find out who wants to see you.'

Na Na scratched her head. 'Doctor Shi, I'm sorry... can you wait for me to shower and change into clean clothes?'

Shi Dan An looked at Na Na from head to toe and she nodded her head. 'That's a good idea. You should leave a good first impression on him.'

Na Na quickly took a cold shower and she changed into a clean outfit.

Shi Dan An led Na Na to her car and she sped all the way to her parents' home.

Shi Dan An parked the car and a bleached white face Na Na swayed outside the passenger seat.

'I'm sorry, I have a bad habit of driving fast,' Shi Dan An said.

Na Na waved her shaky hands to signal she was ok. 'Where are we?'

Shi Dan An led Na Na inside her parents' home. 'My family home.'

Na Na's legs felt limp and she spoke softly. 'What? Your family home?'

Shi Dan An shrugged her shoulders and she closed the front door.

Na Na pulled Shi Dan An's shirt sleeve. 'Why... did you take me to your family home?'

Shi Dan An smiled and she patted Na Na's arm. 'Don't be scared. My old man is a bad person, but he will treat you good.'

Shi Huai Ren used a cane to support his legs that were aching. He limped toward his daughter and his future daughter-in-law. 'You little brat, take a good look at yourself. You're an educated little girl, but you have no sense of etiquette.'

'Old man, I escorted the person you wanted to see. I'm going back to work,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan An walked outside without looking back.

Shi Huai Ren pointed at the sofa and he smiled at Na Na. 'Little girl, come sit down. I'm little Ping's dad. I wanted to meet you long ago.'

Na Na obediently sat on the sofa and her shaky hands accepted the glass of water Dr Shi senior gave her. 'Doctor Shi senior, why did you want to see me?'

'You don't need to be formal with me. Am I really old? You don't need to call me Doctor Shi senior,' Shi Huai Ren said.

Na Na closed her dry mouth.

'You're not a stranger. You should call me the same way little Ping calls me, it's

ok if you call me dad,' Shi Huai Ren said.

Na Na drank a sip of water and she looked helplessly at the ceiling.

'Little girl, you don't need to worry. I know little Ping has been bullying you. I won't let him off the hook easily and I'll discipline him on your behalf,' Shi Huai Ren said.

'I'm really sorry, Shi... Doctor Shi and I don't have any relationship with each,' Na Na said.

'Who said? Little girl, you don't need to be shy. The two of you have no reason to hide your relationship with me. I'll find an auspicious day for both of you and no one will dare to oppose. I'll skin my scoundrel son for you. He has no sense of responsibility toward you and the child,' Shi Huai Ren said.

Na Na didn't know how to convince Dr Shi senior the truth that Shi Dan Ping ended their relationship. 'Uncle Shi, what happened to your legs?'

Shi Huai Ren rubbed his knees and he sighed. 'An old injury. When I was young and in the army I was injured. I didn't look after my injury properly and occasionally it'll hurt... so now at my age some days it's hard to walk.'

Na Na squatted in front of Dr Shi senior. 'Uncle Shi, can I take a look? In the past my dad had a similar injury to you and I used to massage his legs and it eased the pain.'

Shi Huai Ren thought no matter how he looked at his future daughter-in-law, she was a filial and a good little girl. 'Little girl, in the future if little Ping dares to bully you then you can tell me and I'll be happy to discipline him.'

Na Na rolled up Dr Shi senior's pants to his knees. 'Uncle Shi, I'll prepare a bowl of warm water to soak your feet first then I'll massage your legs.'

'Little girl, I'm happy to know you are a filial little girl. But you don't need to serve me. Sit back on the sofa and relax,' Shi Huai Ren said.'

Na Na didn't want Dr Shi senior to talk about Shi Dan Ping so she quickly found a bowl, filled it with warm water and she massaged Dr Shi senior's legs.

Shi Dan Ping arrived at his parents' home and he didn't expect to see the little rabbit in his parent's living room. Earlier when he went home and he found out

the little rabbit packed hers and the little meatball's belongings and left his home without notice made him frustrated. He didn't want to stay in an empty home, and he drove straight to his parents' home to talk to his dad about his patient's second surgery... but he was shocked the little rabbit couldn't use him to save her big brother so she changed her tactics and she targeted his dad to charm him into saving her big brother!

End of Chapter Forty-Nine

Related

part 1

Chapter Fifty (Part 1)

Shi Huai Ren saw his son returned home. 'You have guts to come back here.'

Shi Dan Ping ignored his dad. He strode to the little rabbit and he pulled her up. 'I underestimated you! You couldn't use me so you immediately came to try your luck with my old man! Should I praise you for your quick thinking?'

Na Na looked at Shi Dan Ping with teary eyes.

Shi Dan Ping was also shocked by his own words. The moment he stepped inside his parents' home he saw the little rabbit was massaging someone else's legs even if it was his dad's legs, but he hated to see her suck up to someone else to get on their good side. 'You think by doing this you'll look like a martyr? You think you can use a child to evoke sympathy from the people around you? I'm letting you know the way you're willing to do anything to save your big brother won't get you any sympathy from my family!'

Na Na struggled to stand and she couldn't believe the words she heard.

Shi Huai Ren hit the back of the sofa. 'You scum! Shut your dirty mouth! Is your brain clogged? You can't even appreciate a good girl standing right in front of you, but you dare to insult her? Who do you think you are? What right do you have to insult her?'

'Dad, what do you know? You think she's being filial to you? She's only treating you good because you can operate on her big brother!' Shi Dan Ping said. He turned around and he looked coldly at the little rabbit. 'You're even willing to wash feet and massage legs... even if you don't need your dignity, do you need to cheapen yourself-'

Shi Huai Ren couldn't believe he raised such a rotten little boy. He regretted there wasn't anything lethal near the sofa for him to stone his rotten son's cruel mouth. He could only clutch his chest and pretend to faint on the sofa to stop his rotten son from carelessly hurting his future daughter-in-law.

Shi Dan Ping saw his dad faint on the sofa and he rushed to his dad. 'Dad,

what's wrong?'

Na Na panicked when she saw Dr Shi senior fainted and she forgot about her heartache. 'Uncle Shi, what's wrong. Uncle Shi, wake up.'

Shi Huai Ren ignored his son and his future daughter-in-law's panic, he kept his eyes closed and he played dead.

'Doctor Shi, does uncle Shi have a heart condition? Should I call an ambulance?' Na Na asked.

'You don't need to care! If it wasn't for you, my family wouldn't be in this mess!' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping held his dad's wrist and he checked his dad's pulse, but suddenly his dad's eyes opened and his dad sat upright on the sofa.

Shi Dan Ping let go of his dad's wrist. 'Old man, why did you only faint for only a short time? I didn't even get to call the ambulance.'

Shi Huai Ren rubbed his chest and he glared at his rotten son. 'You unfilial little boy!'

'Uncle Shi, have a good rest... I'm sorry I was a nuisance. I need to leave,' Na Na said in a choked voice.

Na Na ran away, because she didn't want anyone see her pathetic tears.

End of Chapter Fifty (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Fifty (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Huai Ren slapped his son's cheek. 'You deserve this slap because you only know how to use your mouth to hurt someone else!'

Shi Huai Ren stood and he limped to pick up his cane. He raised his cane and he struck his son's back.

Shi Dan Ping didn't avoid his dad's cane. It was a painful strike but he swallowed his urge to cry out.

Shi Huai Ren regretted he didn't discipline his rotten son properly when his son was a child. If his daughter behaved badly, he could say it was partly because she was spoiled by his siblings. But his son grew up under his roof and it was his entire fault for not being stricter on his son. 'How foolish can you be?' He struck his son's shoulders, bottom and thighs. 'You deserve a beating! Why do you hurt the people you love?'

Shi Dan Ping pursed his lips. His forehead was sweaty and each new strike was more painful than the last. But he refused to ask for forgiveness.

Shi Huai Ren couldn't bear to hit his son anymore and he leaned on his cane. 'Do you admit what you said was deeply hurtful?'

Shi Dan Ping wiped sweat off his forehead and he laughed coldly. 'Why is it the rare times I do visit you, you see me as an eyesore... if I knew how easily it was to get on your good side then I would have filled a bowl with water and thoroughly washed your feet long ago.'

Shi Huai Ren slapped his son. 'If I didn't know how much you loved the little girl, I wouldn't bother to discipline you. This pain is nothing compared to the pain you feel when you realised it's too late to treat her the way she deserved to be treated and that you lost her for good.'

Shi Dan Ping hated himself and he regretted his cruel words when he saw the little rabbit held back the tears caused by him. She was the most precious person to him. Most days he did tease her and argue with her over petty things but he

hated to see anyone hurt her. It was the reason why he didn't avoid his dad's cane or his dad's slaps. He did deserve a beating because he carelessly hurt her.

Shi Huai Ren sighed. He was tired and he sat on the sofa. He looked at his son and he pointed to the chair opposite him. 'Sit down.'

Shi Dan Ping sat on the chair opposite his dad and he cried out. It hurt for him to sit on his bottom.

Shi Huai Ren massaged his sore arms. 'Na Na's dad and I were in the same army unit.'

Shi Dan Ping was shocked, he didn't expect his dad knew the little rabbit's family.

'Na Na's dad didn't have a high rank but he was an empathetic soldier. Our superiors and comrades respected him. He was a good man. Later we were assigned to different army units and we lost contact for many years,' Shi Huai Ren said.

'Dad, is that why you made an exception by taking her side instead of your own family member's side?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Shi Huai Ren shook his head. 'Ten years ago I found out at his... I found out he was a photographer after he was injured and left the army... do you remember more than a year ago there was a young man who was taken to the hospital's emergency department because of a cerebral artery rupture?'

Shi Dan Ping remembered that day clearly. He regretted he wasn't on duty that day. There was a bad storm that day and his dad was still working as a neurosurgeon at the hospital. His dad followed the paramedics to examine and bring his patients to the hospital.

Shi Huai Ren remembered that day little Zhexue's dad was in the ambulance with him. The roads were slippery and the ambulance almost collided with a car. Shi Huai Ren was injured and little Zhexue's dad nearly died that day. 'That day there was a bad storm... the paramedic driving the ambulance was sleep deprived from working consecutive shifts, combined with the slippery road the driver was going to hit a car... the driver of that car reacted quickly, the driver swerved the car to avoid the ambulance but unfortunately the car hit an electric

pole and the electric pole fell onto the car and the ambulance.'

Shi Dan Ping 'bad storm, slippery road and electric pole' echoed in his head and his heart constricted. 'Dad, are you saying...'

Shi Huai Ren nodded his head. 'The paramedic driver, little Zhexue's dad and I were injured and there was also my patient in the ambulance... the other paramedic followed the hospital's protocols and he drove us back to the hospital. When another ambulance came to the scene of the car accident, only Na Hao was breathing. The other remaining three passengers in Na Hao's car couldn't be saved.'

Shi Huai Ren was haunted by the car accident that day. He hated himself for choosing to save his own patient and following the hospital's protocols at the expense of three lives.

Shi Dan Ping finally understood why his dad retired early, because his dad couldn't live with a clear conscience knowing his dad sacrificed lives to keep his position as chief of the hospital. 'Does Na Na know?'

Shi Huai Ren shook his head. 'Na Na doesn't know... because of my guilty conscience I purposely used my connections to offer her a job at the hospital and I asked Doctor Zhang and head nurse Liu to look out for her at work. Na Na is a hard worker like her dad... but I didn't expect my own son would use her and bully her to this extent! If you dare bully her again, I'll beat you to death!'

Shi Dan Ping knew he deserved to be scolded. His body ached but it didn't hurt as much as his heart. 'Ok dad, I know. I'll compensate for your mistake, I'll treat her good in the future.'

'It's good you know! Go fix yourself and don't make me embarrassed to be your dad when you walk outside!' Shi Huai Ren said.

Shi Dan Ping limped to his room. He took off his clothes, looked at his naked body in the mirror and he frowned. His shoulders, back, bottom and thighs were black and blue... his handsome face was swollen like a pig's head and there was dried blood on the corner of his lips. He was emotionally and physically in enough pain to want to flip his bed and cry.

End of Chapter fifty (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Fifty-One

Chapter Fifty-One

Na Na understood in the world there were good and bad people, but she did her best to treat everyone equally. After she left the Shi household she didn't know who were good or bad people.

Na Na remembered what her dad taught her – 'Hurt, grief and resentment are fleeting feelings but love will always prevail.'

For the first in Na Na's life she suspected if love was strong enough to overcome the pain of being misunderstood by Shi Dan Ping who she did love. It felt like he slapped her beautiful belief about love. Each of his words stung her heart.

Na Na hailed a taxi and she gave the taxi driver the address to Lam Hai. When she arrived at Lam Hai, Na Hao's nurse greeted her and she helped wash Na Hao's body to let his nurse rest.

Na Na sat in front of Na Hao's bed. She stroked his clean shaved face. Although Na Hao couldn't see or hear, she was happy that the nurses took good care of him.

Na Na used a warm towel and she wiped Na Hao's smooth face. 'Big brother, there is a good childcare at the hospital. Little Yuan transferred there and I can spend more time with little Yuan... big brother, I'm useless. You used to take me everywhere with you when I was younger and it didn't matter if your peers teased you for taking care of a little girl... but I'm sorry I can't do the same for your only child. I can't give little Yuan a stable life. Little Yuan understands the situation and he doesn't resent me, but I know he doesn't have a sense of security... I lied to him that you, my sister-in-law and her parents are staying at a faraway place. I told him that you will come back soon to take care of him... but it's more than a year and you haven't woken up. Do you know how scared I am? Big brother, how can you let me break another promise I made to little Yuan? He will hate an aunt like me...'

Na Na leaned on Na Hao's shoulder and she cried. She felt his shoulder that

used to be broad and strong had become thin and fragile, it made her cry louder. 'Big brother, wake up... I really miss you, little Yuan really miss you too... big brother, I love someone, he's a genius neurosurgeon, I don't know why I love him... he's bad natured but he's a good person and has a soft heart, I don't know how to stop loving him... he doesn't love me... big brother, wake up and tell me what I should do. I really love him and I don't want him to hate me... big brother, why aren't you waking up? Wake up, I don't want to cry anymore. If you can hear me crying and begging you to wake up, why aren't you waking up? I hate you...'

Na Na didn't know how long she cried for, but when she lifted her head and she looked outside the window it was almost sunset. 'Big brother, don't worry about me and have a good rest. I just needed a good cry and I'm ok... little Yuan is ok. We're waiting for you to wake up.'

Na Na reluctantly left Na Hao's room. She took a taxi to the hospital and she picked up little Yuan at childcare.

Na Yuan saw his little aunt and he ran to her. 'Little aunt!' He held his little aunt's hand. 'Little aunt, what are we eating for dinner? I'm really hungry.'

Na Na laughed and she rubbed little Yuan's soft stomach. She squeezed his nose. 'Tonight I'll take you out to eat a buffet dinner, ok?'

Na Yuan cheered. He looked around for uncle but he didn't see uncle. 'Little aunt, isn't uncle going out to eat with us?'

Na Na forced herself to smile. 'Uncle is busy. In the future we can't bother uncle anymore.'

'But... before uncle was busy too and we still lived together,' Na Yuan said.

'Little Yuan, wasn't it you who hated uncle? Mmm... if little Yuan wants an uncle to play with you, how about I invite uncle Wei to come out with us to play with you?' Na Na asked.

Na Yuan frowned. 'Little aunt, is it because you have uncle Wei you forgot about uncle?'

'Little rascal, where did you learn to speak nonsense?' Na Na asked.

Na Yuan lifted his chin. 'Little aunt, it's wrong for you to abandon uncle. Between uncle and uncle Wei... I want uncle to be my little uncle.'

'Why? Wasn't it you who liked uncle Wei more than uncle?' Na Na asked.

Na Yuan patted his little aunt's hand. 'Daddy said, little uncle is family. Uncle Wei is a good person, he treats me good, he takes me to places to play and he taught me how to be a better skier. Uncle Wei isn't like uncle who calls me chubby and sometimes uncle hits my bottom... but I know uncle loves me like family. Uncle Wei is a good person, but uncle Wei is an outsider.'

Na Na hugged little Yuan and she kissed his cheek. She wondered if perhaps Shi Dan Ping was the same as little Yuan, on the outside they said they hated each other but on the inside they loved each other.

Na Na squatted in front of little Yuan. 'Little Yuan... don't worry, uncle Wei is only my good friend.'

Na Yuan nodded his head. 'Ok, little aunt. Let's go eat dinner.'

Na Na's buffet dinner for little Yuan included his favourite sweet dishes, a lot of ice-cream and chocolate cake for dessert.

After dinner Na Yuan was surprised his little aunt didn't take him back to uncle's house. 'Little aunt, aren't we sleeping with uncle tonight?'

Na Na used a tissue to wipe little Yuan's mouth. 'I'm really sorry my precious darling. I promise we'll only be staying here a few days. I'll look for a beautiful and spacious place for us to live together and we'll move out.'

Na Yuan nodded his head and he patted his little aunt's cheek. 'Little aunt, I'm ok. I'm happy to live anywhere with you.'

End of Chapter Fifty-One

Related

Fifty-Two

Chapter Fifty-Two

Mao Dan and Na Na's home was cramped, but Mao Dan loved Na Yuan. Mao Dan played with Na Yuan and she squeezed his cheeks before she worked the night shift.

Na Na and Na Yuan settled into their cramped home. But Shi Dan Ping was miserable in his cold spacious house. He was too embarrassed to eat outside, because of his swollen pig head. He hid inside his house and he ate instant noodles for dinner.

After Shi Dan Ping ate the instant noodles, he remembered the country trip he and the little rabbit went together for work. The little rabbit made him a bowl of instant noodles and she added meat slices for him... that day she looked like a little rabbit who held a delicious carrot, he didn't know why he was attracted to the little rabbit... he was hungry for the little rabbit.

Shi Dan Ping walked to his room, he collapsed on his bed and he rolled around his bed. His bed was too spacious and empty without the little rabbit and the little meatball. His sense of loneliness kept him awake most of the night.

The following morning Shi Dan Ping woke up and he was determined to bring the little rabbit and the little meatball back home. He quickly brushed his teeth, washed his face and he changed his clothes for work.

At work Shi Dan Ping was surprised the little rabbit wasn't at work that day either. He grudgingly asked Liu Nan about the little rabbit. 'Did Na Na come to work today?'

'Na Na... why are you wearing a surgical mask?' Liu Nan asked.

'I cut my chin,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Ok... Na Na did come to work, but Wei Zhexue called her to look at a house to rent. Wei Zhexue is a good man. He's handsome, gentle, caring and considerate. Not like someone who has a stinky mouth and who is stubborn,' Liu Nan said.

Shi Dan Ping was livid, he couldn't believe the little rabbit ran off to be with

another man!

Shi Dan Ping was jealous, if he didn't need to operate in the morning he would go catch the cheating little rabbit!

Shi Dan Ping paced in his office for a while and he decided to call the little rabbit. 'The patient's surgery is scheduled at half past eight this morning!'

Na Na heard Shi Dan Ping hung up his phone. She hung up her phone and she looked at Wei Zhexue who stood beside her. 'I'm really sorry. I need to go back to work... can we go see the house another day?'

Wei Zhexue knew Shi Dan Ping purposely called Na Na to come back to work. Wei Zhexue nodded his head and he smiled. 'It's my fault. I arranged to see the house last minute. You should go back to work. For the next appointment to see the house I promise I'll give you more notice.'

Na Na waved bye to Wei Zhexue. 'I'm grateful for your help.'

Na Na rushed to the seventeenth floor of the hospital, she changed into her nurse uniform then she ran to the operating room. She didn't want to go inside in case she bothered Shi Dan Ping so she sat on a chair outside the operating room and she waited with the patient's family. 'Aunty, don't worry. Doctor Shi will do his best to try to save your son.'

The patient's son was sixteen years old and he was leaning against a wall. 'That's right grandma, dad will be ok.'

'Doctor Shi is a good person... I'm old but I know I made things hard for Doctor Shi. I begged him to save my son. He explained to me it's too risky for my son to have a second surgery... but he's my only son, I don't want to give up on him. I want to give him every chance to wake up... if I didn't have my grandson then I don't know how I can cope,' the patient's mum said.

Inside the operating room the atmosphere was tensed. The patient's second surgery was laborious and the patient's body condition was unstable.

In the afternoon Na Na asked Mao Dan to pick up little Yuan for her. Then she bought lunch for the patient's family. They waited outside the operating room together.

The patient's second surgery ended after thirteen hours.

Shi Dan Ping walked slowly outside the operating room. 'I'm really sorry. We did our best-'

The patient's mum fainted, but Na Na caught the patient's mum before she fell on the floor.

The patient's son punched a wall.

Na Na helped the patient's mum to sit in a wheelchair and she wheeled the patient's mum to emergency.

Shi Dan Ping slumped on a chair. He stared at his hands and he asked himself the questions he dreaded... what if the patient who died on the operating table was Na Hao and how would the little rabbit react?

End of Chapter Fifty-Two

Related

Fifty-Three

Chapter Fifty-Three

The following day Shi Dan Ping and his colleagues were given work leave to recover from yesterday's thirteen hour surgery.

During the medical staff morning briefing at the hospital only Luo Xing Tao was in high spirits.

'Isn't it best to follow the hospital's protocols? Doctor Shi is indeed a reckless young doctor. This is what happens when someone young like him wants to show off a new way to perform a surgery. He is an arrogant youth who considers himself a master surgeon. As if a master surgeon can defeat inevitable death. Look at how his good intentions turned out. The patient's mum and son has no one to lean on. Doctor Shi shouldn't avoid taking responsibility for his actions and drag the hospital down because he overestimated his surgical skills,' Luo Xing Tao said.

'Doctor Shi is a responsible doctor! He clearly wrote the risks of a second surgery on the consent forms. He also explained to the patient's family the risks, it was the patient's family that requested him to perform the second surgery and they understood what the likely outcome was. Doctor Shi did everything he could to try to save the patient!' Na Na said.

'That's right! If the doctors here want to fault Doctor Shi for doing his best to save a patient then I think those doctors should consider about not being doctors anymore. Saving someone is wrong, not saving someone is wrong... look at yourselves, you all have experiences in your eyes, but your eyes can't see clearly as little Na's eyes,' Liu Nan said.

'Enough. If everyone has energy to fight then use that energy to examine patients! Head nurse Liu and little Na is right. Doctor Shi followed the hospital's protocols. He explained to the patient's family about the risks of a second surgery and it was the patient's family that requested the second surgery. The patient's family has no intentions of suing Doctor Shi or the hospital so there is no need to for conflict amongst staff members... everyone should look at

themselves first before pointing fingers. How many patients died under your hands? Did you not do your best to try to save those patients? Sometimes one failure is necessary to pave way for one hundred thousand successes. Where is everyone's work ethics today? Look at the time, everyone hurry up and go to work!' Zhang Wei Dong said.

Everyone quickly left the staff room to start their day shift.

'Little Luo, stay here. I want to talk to you in private,' Zhang Wei Dong said.

'Doctor Zhang, what did you want to talk about?' Luo Xing Tao asked.

Zhang Wei Dong pointed to the chair opposite his chair. 'Sit down and we can talk comfortably.'

Luo Xing Tao sat on the chair and he frowned.

'Little Luo, do you feel I favour Doctor Shi over you?' Zhang Wei Dong asked.

Luo Xing Tao refused to answer Zhang Wei Dong's rhetorical question.

Zhang Wei Dong sighed. 'You are someone I mentored for many years. I can understand your way of thinking when it's work related. Doctor Shi is a brilliant doctor and he has a bright future-'

'He only studied overseas for a few years,' Luo Xing Tao said spitefully.

'Did you know Shi Huai Ren is his dad?' Zhang Wei Dong asked.

'What? The old chief Shi is... ' Luo Xing Tao said. He laughed coldly. 'No wonder... if he has the old chief Shi's support then there's nothing he can't have.'

'What you're saying is an insult to them! The old chief Shi sacrificed his whole life for the hospital. The old chief Shi and little Ping's mum prioritised patients over their own family. Little Ping and little An since they were children they weren't close to their parents. The four of them have dedicated their lives to patients... Little Luo, you're a good doctor. You do take responsibility for your patients, but there are many aspects you can't measure up to little Ping. Little Ping discussed with me long ago, he doesn't want my position. He said his personality isn't suited to be chief, he wants to focus on saving patients and he recommended that I should consider nominating you as the next chief!'" Zhang

Wei Dong said.

‘What? He took the initiative and said he didn’t want to be chief?’ Luo Xing Tao said.

Zhang Wei Dong nodded his head. ‘I understand compared to his good intentions to save patients, your good intentions are lacking. But a chief needs to be ambitious and I know you’re suited for the position of a chief. In my eyes you’re both important to me,’ Zhang Wei Dong.

Luo Xing Tao lowered his head in shame for his past work attitude and his jealous behaviour.

Zhang Wei Dong patted Luo Xing Tao’s shoulder. ‘Remember to think long term and you need to treat everyone around you good from now on. Because if something happens, you can still face them with a clear conscience.’

That day was a significant day for Luo Xing Tao who reflected and regretted his vindictive actions.

It was also a significant day for Shi Dan Ping because he drove to Lam Hai to meet his future brother-in-law.

End of Chapter Fifty-Three

Related

Fifty-Four

Chapter Fifty-Four

Shi Dan Ping arrived at Lam Hai and he examined Na Hao's medical records and scans. Shi Dan Ping's head and heart hurt because it was a miracle Na Hao was still alive after a severe head injury.

Shi Dan Ping visited Na Hao's room. He sat in front of Na Hao's bed. He thought although Na Hao was thin and Na Hao's eyes were closed, Na Hao looked like the little rabbit and the little meatball. Except he felt the little rabbit was more loveable than Na Hao and the little meatball.

Shi Dan Ping checked the medical equipment in Na Hao's room were in good condition then he drove to his parents' home.

'Oh? Big brother, what wind brought you here?' Shi Dan An asked.

Shi Dan Ping ignored his little sister's sarcasm and he showed her Na Hao's scans.

'Big brother, where did you find this patient? I haven't come across this rare case since medical school. My professor allowed to observe this kind of rare surgery, but unfortunately the patient died before making it to the operating table,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan Ping silently scrutinised Na Hao's scans.

'Big brother, is this patient still alive,' Shi Dan An asked.

'Um, he's still alive, he's stable but he's unconscious... do you think I should take on this surgery?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'As your sister, I don't want you to risk your career to perform any more risky surgeries. The outcome is likely death or paralysis. But as your colleague I think you shouldn't waste this opportunity! Look at how deep this steel is lodged into his brain but he's still alive and stable,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. 'You haven't suggested any solutions about how to take the steel out. You've only been speaking to me about nonsense.'

Shi Dan An knew the patient's case was important to her big brother so she didn't want to fight with her big brother. She heard the sounds of a cane, she turned around and it was their dad.

'The steel has been lodged inside the patient's brain for a long time and it has rusted. You can't use a drill to take the steel out. It's a high risk surgery and any unsteady movements when taking the steel out will cause the patient to wake up in a vegetable state,' Shi Huai Ren said.

'Isn't there a way I can help him?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Shi Huai Ren patted his son's shoulder. 'Little boy, all these years you didn't bring scans home unless you thought there was a possible solution.'

'Big brother, are you scared after one failed surgery?' Shi Dan An asked.

'How can that be possible?' Shi Dan Ping denied.

Shi Dan An frowned. 'Who do you want to fool? How is the patient related to you that you are this worried?'

'He's my older brother-in-law. Of course I have to provide him with careful service,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An was speechless. She hadn't seen her big brother for a few days, but another thick layer formed on her big brother's face.

Shi Huai Ren nodded his head. 'Um, when a patient is a close relative it's hard not to feel heavy pressure. But you shouldn't worry too much, there'll be a solution.'

Shi Dan An couldn't bear to look at the father and son pair of thick faces in front of her any longer. She suspected she wasn't related to them, because she was adopted!

Shi Dan Ping massaged his temples, his head hurt from looking at Na Hao's scans the whole day. He took out his phone and he called the little rabbit. 'Meet me in half an hour in front of my building. I want to talk to you about your big brother.'

Shi Dan Ping sped home. He hadn't spent time with the little rabbit for a few days but it felt like years. He missed her. When he stood in front of his building,

he looked at her and his thought she lost a lot of weight. Her chin wasn't round and her cheeks sunk a little.

Na Na avoided eye contact with Shi Dan Ping. 'Have you eaten?'

'No,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na followed Shi Dan Ping inside his home. 'What do you want to eat? I'll cook it for you.'

'Na Na, you know exactly what ingredients are at home,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na felt the atmosphere was strange and she escaped to the kitchen. 'Ok, I'll cook a meal. You can rest for a while.'

Shi Dan Ping happily went to shower. He felt like the house wasn't lonely anymore.

Shi Dan Ping walked out of the bathroom and the little rabbit made him a bowl of dumpling soup. 'Na Na, aren't you going to eat with me?'

Na Na shook her head. 'I ate before.'

Shi Dan Ping ate his bowl of dumpling soup. He thought the little rabbit's home cooked meals were the best.

'About my big brother... did you decide that you want to operate on him?' Na Na asked.

'Na Na, you know clearly your big brother's condition. It's a high risk surgery. I can't guarantee you anything. Yesterday a patient died under my hands. It is up to you to decide if you want to give consent for me to operate on your big brother,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Doctor Shi, I believe in you!' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping was overjoyed to hear the little rabbit believed in him. He pretended her words didn't affect him and he spoke calmly. 'Save those words for after the surgery.'

Na Na thought Shi Dan Ping didn't believe her. She held his hand. 'Doctor Shi, I believe in you! If I didn't believe in you then in the world there isn't another doctor I can believe in.'

‘That’s good,’ Shi Dan Ping. He pretended he didn’t care and he retrieved his hand. ‘Wait until after the surgery then you can suck up to me.’

Na Na blushed and she smiled awkwardly.

Shi Dan Ping glanced outside a window and the night sky was dark. ‘It’s late. Where’s the little rascal? Is he by himself?’

Na Na scratched her head, she didn’t know what to say because she didn’t want Shi Dan Ping to worry that little Yuan was staying at hers and Mao Dan’s home. Mao Dan was babysitting little Yuan. ‘Don’t worry, little Yuan is with Wei Zhexue. Even if I didn’t come home tonight, it’ll be ok.’

Shi Dan Ping boiled on the inside. How could the little rabbit leave the little meatball with the stinky Wei Zhexue?

End of Chapter Fifty-Four

Related

Fifty-Five

Chapter Fifty-Five

‘Do you think my big brother’s surgery is... impossible?’ Na Na asked.

‘No. Wasn’t it you who said you believe in me?’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Is not that I don’t believe in you... I know my big brother’s condition well that’s why I’m worried. I’m scared... if my big brother can’t wake up, what am I going to do?’ Na Na said.

Na Na cried, she was hopeful and scared. She saw Shi Dan Ping stretch out his hand to touch her head, but she avoided his touch.

Shi Dan Ping glared at the little rabbit. She smiled and she moved her head closer for him to touch. He scoffed and he knocked her head a few times.

Na Na held Shi Dan Ping’s hand. ‘What should I do? Tomorrow should I make an appointment for someone to take new scans of my big brother’s brain?’

‘The steel in your big brother’s brain can move deeper into his brain over time... if nothing is done to remove the steel then over time his chances of waking up diminishes,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na knew what Shi Dan Ping said was true that was why she wanted to schedule her big brother’s surgery soon.

‘Tomorrow I’ll go to Lam Hai to prepare for your big brother’s surgery. I’ll make an appointment for staff to carefully transfer him to the hospital,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘What do you want me to do?’ Na Na asked.

‘You... need to do something important... you need to make me feel at peace,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘How?’ Na Na asked.

‘Like... living together with me,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na blushed. ‘It’s getting dark outside-’

‘Um, it’s late. Go shower and sleep,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na was speechless.

‘If you don’t want to sleep we can discuss your big brother’s surgery,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na heard Shi Dan Ping’s husky tone and she knew what he wanted. ‘I... I need to go home. Little Yuan is by himself, he’ll be worried if I don’t go home-’

‘The little meatball has Wei Zhexue to look after him. Do you want to discuss about your big brother’s surgery or not?’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Thank you Doctor Shi, but I need to go. I need to pick up little Yuan. If I’m late to pick him up he will make a racket,’ Na Na said.

‘Ok, I’ll take you home,’ Shi Dan Ping said reluctantly.

Na Na swallowed her saliva. She didn’t dare not to let Shi Dan Ping take her home.

Shi Dan Ping walked the little rabbit home. But he felt it was strange she walked behind him when the couples around them were walking shoulder to shoulder.

‘Na Na, why are you walking behind me?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na walked faster and Shi Dan Ping’s left hand held her right hand. Suddenly he pinched her hand and she nearly tripped if he didn’t hug her.

‘Na Na, you need to watch where you’re walking,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit for a while then he held her hand and he led her home.

‘I’m home. You can let go of my hand. It’s not good if others see us,’ Na Na said.

‘I’m not allowed to date?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

‘I don’t want others to misunderstand about us,’ Na Na said.

‘Na Na, if you hide our relationship then others will misunderstand we’re having a secret affair. Our relationship is legitimate, there’s no reason why we can’t let others know about our relationship,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na didn't dare open her mouth but she wanted to protest! What legitimate relationship? Shi Dan Ping was the one who suspected she used him to save her big brother, and he told her not to appear in front of him anymore!

Shi Dan Ping refused to let go of the little rabbit's hand. He led her up the stairs of her building. The stairway lighting was dim and the stairs reeked of an unbearable urine stench. The further they walked, he saw more cockroaches and mice. His heart ached, he hated himself and he regretted his careless words.

'I'm home,' Na Na said.

Na Na waited for Shi Dan Ping to let go of her hand, but he opened the front door with his free hand.

'Shi... Shi... Shi... Doctor Shi? It's late... is there something you wanted?' Mao Dan said.

Shi Dan Ping pinched the little rabbit's shoulder.

'He wanted to take me home,' Na Na said reluctantly.

Mao Dan widened her eyes. She heard Na Na's voice and she finally noticed Doctor Shi was hugging Na Na.

'Na Na, what's wrong? Why aren't you introducing your housemate to me?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'This is Mao Dan, she's a nurse in the obstetrics department... Mao Dan, do you need me to introduce you to Doctor Shi?' Na Na said.

Mao Dan glared at Na Na. Then Mao Dan stretched out her hand and she smiled sweetly at Doctor Shi. 'Hello Doctor Shi, I'm Mao Dan.'

'Cat egg? Interesting name,' Shi Dan Ping said. He shook Mao Dan's hand. 'Thank you for taking care of my Na Na.'

Mao Dan and Na Na were speechless.

Uncle Wei came to visit Na Yuan to read him a bedtime story, but Na Yuan heard the front door opened and he ran outside the bedroom. 'Little aunt! You're home!'

Na Yuan saw uncle. He immediately pointed a finger at uncle's face and he

glared at uncle. ‘Stinky uncle! You didn’t keep your promise! Give me back my lollipops!’

‘When did uncle break a promise with you?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

End of Chapter Fifty-Five

Related

Fifty-Six

Chapter Fifty-Six

Na Yuan puffed his chest and he stood in front of uncle. 'Uncle is a liar! Uncle ate my lollipops and you promised me you would never kick little aunt and me out of your home. But you lied, you don't need little aunt and me!'

Shi Dan Ping's heart ached when he heard the sadness in the little meatball's tone. The little meatball's eyes were teary, the little meatball stood between him and the little rabbit as if to protect the little rabbit from him.

Shi Dan Ping squatted in front of the little meatball. He spoke in a choked voice. 'Uncle is really sorry. Uncle needs you and your little aunt. Uncle came here to take you and your little aunt home. Can we go home together?'

Na Yuan glared at uncle, but he wanted to believe uncle. He turned around and he looked at his little aunt who was crying. 'Uncle bullied little aunt, I know you made little aunt sad. If uncle promise in the future that uncle will be good and never bully little aunt then I'll follow uncle home.'

Na Na didn't know when little Yuan felt Shi Dan Ping's home was little Yuan's home and she didn't know when little Yuan stopped crying at night and stopped asking for his daddy.

Na Na looked at Shi Dan Ping. She couldn't believe a bad natured man like him could love little Yuan immensely, give little Yuan a sense of warmth, security and strong shoulders to lean on.

Shi Dan Ping nodded his head. 'I promise!'

Na Yuan ran to uncle. He hugged uncle's neck and he rubbed his cheek against uncle's cheek. 'Uncle is bad! Uncle is a liar! I hate uncle! Will uncle chase me and little aunt away again?'

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little meatball. He rubbed the little meatball's head. 'I promise I will never chase you and your little aunt away again. My home is your home. In the future if uncle makes you and your little aunt angry then you and your little aunt can kick me out of your home.'

Na Yuan stopped crying. He kissed uncle's cheek. 'Uncle, I want to go home. I don't want to hug aunty Mao to sleep, I want to hug uncle to sleep.'

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little meatball, he stood and the little meatball's head rested on his shoulder. He wiped tears off the little meatball's face. 'Ok, let's go home together.'

Na Na shook her head. 'Little Yuan be good and listen to me. You and I will stay here for a few more days. I'll find us a beautiful and spacious home soon then you and I can live there together.'

Mao Dan looked at Doctor Shi and Na Yuan who were glaring at Na Na, and she looked at Na Na who was being stubborn. Mao Dan didn't understand their complicated situation.

Mao Dan hit Na Na's shoulder. 'Where are you going to find a place near the hospital that's affordable and beautiful? What little Yuan needs should be the most important thing. Why are you speaking nonsense?'

Mao Dan thought Na Na was unreasonable. The hospital's darling jewel who was like a beautiful glory-of-the-snow flower that grew on top of a cold mountain was bowing his head and apologising sincerely in front of Na Na. But Na Na hesitated and Mao Dan thought Na Na was asking the heavens to strike Na Na with a lightning bolt.

'Little Yuan, we can't bother Doctor Shi,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping secretly pinched the little meatball's bottom.

Na Yuan understood what uncle wanted him to do. Na Yuan scrunched his face and he pretended he was about to cry. He looked pitifully at his little aunt.

Na Na sighed. 'Little Yuan, how about you go back to uncle's home and I stay here to look for a new home for you and me to live together?'

Na Yuan squeezed tears out of his eyes. 'Little aunt, don't you need me anymore?'

'Of course I need little Yuan. I love little Yuan the most! Little Yuan be good and go back to uncle's home. Wait for me to find a new home for us and I'll come pick you up, ok?' Na Na said.

Na Yuan pretended to cry loudly on uncle's shoulder.

Na Na stepped closer to Shi Dan Ping and she gently patted little Yuan's back. 'Little Yuan, why aren't you listening to me? Little Yuan be good and don't cry anymore.' She sighed helplessly. 'If little Yuan stop crying, I'll come back to uncle's home together with you, ok?'

Little Yuan lifted his head off Shi Dan Ping's shoulder and Na Na was shocked to see his cheeks were rosy and dry! Na Na couldn't believe she was tricked by little Yuan's crocodile tears!

Na Yuan grabbed his little aunt's shirt sleeve and he cheered. 'Yay! Uncle, little aunt and I can live together again.'

Na Na squeezed little Yuan's cheeks. 'Little rascal!'

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little meatball. On the inside he was elated, but he spoke calmly. 'Na Na, since you agreed to come home, quickly pack and we'll go home together.'

'Take little Yuan downstairs first. I'll pack a few things and I'll come downstairs,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping knew the little rabbit wanted to speak privately with the cat egg so he carried the little meatball downstairs.

Na Na closed the front door and she turned around to face Mao Dan. 'Dan Dan, I'm really sorry. I didn't hide anything from you. I didn't know Doctor Shi and I became like this. Dan Dan, I didn't say anything to you because I didn't know-'

'What are you saying? You don't need to say sorry to me, because you didn't do anything wrong,' Mao Dan said.

'But Doctor Shi-' Na Na said.

Mao Dan patted Na Na's arm. 'Doctor Shi is a beautiful glory-of-the-snow flower that grows on top of a cold mountain. He is someone who I can only admire from a distance and I'm not meant to pluck him. I know his mouth is too poisonous for me. But you were born immune to his poisonous mouth. Don't waste what the heavens blessed you with.'

Na Na was grateful Mao Dan was an understanding friend.

Mao Dan stepped closer to Na Na and she spoke softly. 'Na Na, all your attention was on Doctor Shi and you forgot about Wei Zhexue. I'll go next door and let you speak privately with Zhexue.'

Na Na was shocked she forgot about Wei Zhexue who came to visit little Yuan.

Na Na slowly walked into the bedroom.

Wei Zhexue lowered his head and he sighed. 'Na Na are you certain... you want to forgive Shi Dan Ping?'

'Little Yuan really loves Doctor Shi, and this place isn't suitable for little Yuan to live in,' Na Na said.

Wei Zhexue laughed at himself. 'I lost because of little Yuan?'

'Huh?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue took a deep breath. 'Na Na, can't you feel that I liked you for a long time?'

'Wei... Wei... Wei Zhexue... you don't need to joke,' Na Na said.

'I didn't want to scare you away. I slowly got closer to you, but I didn't expect Shi Dan Ping to jump in and obstruct the path half-way. He is too heavy for me to clear the path,' Wei Zhexue said.

'I'm really sorry-' Na Na said.

'Na Na, you don't need to say you're sorry. Since we met, I heard 'thank you' and 'I'm sorry' from you the most. Even if you don't like me, you don't need to be courteous with me like this,' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na was speechless.

'Na Na, do you love Shi Dan Ping? I can't think of a reason why you can love someone bad natured as Shi Dan Ping who only knows how to make you suffer,' Wei Zhexue said.

End of Chapter Fifty-Six

Related

part 1

Chapter Fifty-Seven (Part 1)

‘Wei Zhexue, I’m really sorry I can’t reciprocate your feelings. You’re a good person, I’ll always see you as a good friend. As for Doctor Shi... at a glance he looks like a bad person. If you look closer you can see he has a good heart. At work he looks like he has an indifferent attitude but if a patient’s family member cries and begs him to save the patient, on the inside he’s empathetic to their despair. His cold front is his way of protecting his vulnerabilities-’ Na Na said.

‘Enough!’ Wei Zhexue said. He knocked Na Na’s head. He knew Shi Dan Ping for more than twenty years, and he didn’t want to hear Na Na talk about Shi Dan Ping anymore because his jealousy made him petty. ‘I confessed my feelings to you because I didn’t want to pity myself. Pretend you didn’t hear anything... Na Na, I sincerely like you and I’m willing to take care of you. But if you can’t reciprocate my feelings I’ll not force you and I’ll let go of my feelings for you. You don’t owe me anything. But I want you to remember if you feel that you and Shi Dan Ping are not compatible... at that time if I’m still waiting for you, I hope you’ll give us a chance to be together.’

Na Na sighed. ‘Wei Zhexue, why do you need to be like this-’

Wei Zhexue rubbed Na Na’s head. ‘I need to go. You should pack or the petty Shi Dan Ping will hold a grudge against me.’

Wei Zhexue was happy Na Na lowered her head, because she couldn’t see his forced smile and watch him leave defeated.

Na Na silently contemplated in the bedroom for a while. She thought Wei Zhexue was her ideal lover, he was gentle and considerate like her dad and her big brother. But it didn’t matter how good natured Wei Zhexue was, because he wasn’t Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na didn’t expect to love someone like Shi Dan Ping who was the opposite of her ideal lover. Shi Dan Ping was bad natured, had a bad temper and petty. But she felt there was no perfect love in the world and she couldn’t control her feelings, it was Shi Dan Ping who she loved. Love for her was simple as wanting

to be together with someone, and the person she wanted to be together with for the rest of her life was Shi Dan Ping.

Na Na quickly packed some of hers and little Yuan's belongings in one small bag because she didn't want Shi Dan Ping to wait too long.

Shi Dan Ping carried the little meatball downstairs. He was impatient and he wanted the little rabbit to pack faster. When he saw the stinky Wei Zhexue come downstairs he wanted to insult the stinky Wei Zhexue, but the stinky Wei Zhexue walked away like he was invisible.

Na Yuan waved bye to uncle Wei, but he was surprised uncle Wei didn't see him. Na Yuan rested his head on uncle's shoulder for a while. He heard footsteps, he lifted his head and he saw his little aunt. 'Little aunt, I'm sleepy.'

Na Na rubbed little Yuan's head. 'If you're sleepy then sleep.'

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little meatball. He was sad to see the little rabbit only packed one small bag and he spoke softly to let the little meatball sleep. 'I'm really sorry. I was wrong. I didn't want to kick you and the little meatball out of our home. At that time I was hurting. Na Na, you know I'm bad natured. I was scared I would say many things to hurt you while I was angry so I wanted to sleep at my parents' house for two days to calm my anger... I was wrong, I shouldn't have suspected you were using me. Can you come back-'

Na Na was frustrated. It was passed little Yuan's bed time, but Shi Dan Ping stood still. 'I am coming back. Why aren't you walking? Little Yuan is sleepy, let's go home first. We can talk later.'

End of Chapter Fifty-Seven (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Fifty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Shi Dan Ping refused to move because the small bag contained limited items. 'Na Na, listen to me first. I was wrong. If you don't feel secure then tomorrow I'll transfer the title deed of our home to your name. In the future our home is yours. Only you can kick me out and you won't need to worry I'll kick you out.'

'Doctor Shi, what title deed? Don't do anything reckless. I'm not accepting your house,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping felt the little rabbit was saying she couldn't accept him. He was scared what Liu Nan said that it would be him crying in a corner in the future was true.

Na Na wanted to put little Yuan to bed as soon as possible. 'Let's go, it's late.'

Shi Dan Ping felt helpless. He could only carry the little meatball home first and explain properly to the little rabbit later.

The moment Shi Dan Ping carried the little meatball into their home, as he feared... the little rabbit lifted the little meatball from his arms and she took the little meatball to the little meatball's room to sleep.

Shi Dan Ping followed the little rabbit to the little meatball's room. He helped take off the little meatball's shoes.

'Doctor Shi, it's late and you should sleep early to go to work tomorrow,' Na Na said.

'What about you?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na thought Shi Dan Ping wanted her to sleep with him. She felt shy and she adjusted the bedsheet over little Yuan to hide her blush. 'I'm tired. Tonight little Yuan and I will sleep in the guest rooms.'

Shi Dan Ping felt depressed. The little rabbit didn't even want to look at him. He slowly walked back to his bedroom.

Na Na exhaled gently. She didn't know what to say if Shi Dan Ping asked her

directly to sleep with him that night. She showered and she walked to her bedroom.

Na Na woke up the next morning refreshed, because she slept on a comfortable and clean bed. She looked at the clock on the wall, it was seven in the morning. She rushed to little Yuan's room, she woke him up and she helped him prepare to go to childcare.

Na Na quickly changed clothes in her room, whilst little Yuan waited in his room. But when she walked outside her room she was surprised to see there was a breakfast buffet on the dining table... and Shi Dan Ping sat in front of the dining table like he was waiting for her.

'Good morning Doctor Shi. I'm really sorry, I woke up late and I didn't cook breakfast-' Na Na said.

'Na Na, it's ok. In the future you can sleep in and I'll cook breakfast for us,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'What?' Na Na asked.

'I'll cook dinner for us too,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na frowned. 'Doctor Shi... did you stay up all night?'

'I'll do the housework for us too,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na was speechless. She thought there was something wrong with her hearing.

Shi Dan Ping saw disbelief on the little rabbit's face and he quickly passed her a piece of paper he signed. 'Na Na, you don't believe me? I wrote down everything on this paper. I promise I will do everything for us. Na Na, please forgive me.'

Na Na picked up the piece of paper and she looked at the heading – 'Na Na, please forgive me.'

Na Na lifted her head and she looked at Shi Dan Ping. 'But I already forgave you.'

'Truly? Or is it because you see me as an outsider and you forgave me?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na felt sad because she remembered the day she apologised and confessed she loved Shi Dan Ping, he said he forgave her because she wasn't important to him.

Shi Dan Ping's face was bleached white. 'Is that why you forgave me... it was my fault. I know I don't deserve you to forgive me after the hurtful things I said to you.'

Na Na was confused. She didn't understand why Shi Dan Ping's face was gloomy. 'Doctor Shi, what is wrong with you?'

Shi Dan Ping creased his forehead. He felt that the little rabbit and him weren't speaking on the same wavelength. 'Na Na, will you be living here with me?'

Na Na nodded her head. 'Um, I brought mine and little Yuan's belongings here.'

'Then why did you only bring a few of your belongings here? Are you planning to stay here for a few days then you'll move out with the little meatball after you found somewhere else to live?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na sighed. She finally understood why Shi Dan Ping was acting strange in the morning. 'Doctor Shi, you are overthinking things. Last night I was in a hurry to put little Yuan to bed. There wasn't enough time for me to pack everything. I only packed enough clothes for little Yuan and me to wear today. If you don't kick us out soon then we'll stay here for a while.'

'A while?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'Ok, if you don't kick little Yuan and me out then before I move out with little Yuan, I'll give you notice,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. He was relieved the little rabbit and the little meatball didn't plan to run away. But he saw the little rabbit was reading the piece of paper he gave her. He panicked and he wanted to retrieve the piece of paper but she protected it.

'Give it back to me,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na ran away from the dining table and she hid the piece of paper inside her pocket. She patted her pocket as if it hid a precious treasure. 'I'm not giving it

back. You wrote this for me. I'm going to take good care of it.'

Shi Dan Ping was embarrassed. He felt his earlobes were burning. He drank a glass of water and he pretended he didn't write anything. 'We'll be late for work. Hurry up and eat breakfast.'

End of Chapter Fifty-Seven (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Fifty-Eight

Chapter Fifty-Eight

Shi Dan Ping bought Na Na a cup of coffee and it didn't go unnoticed by Liu Nan's observant eyes.

'Little Ping stop pretending. Written on your left eye is 'pervert' and written on your right eye is 'begging.' Only little Na's blind eyes can cherish you,' Liu Nan said.

Shi Dan Ping's triumphant eyes dismissed Liu Nan's provocation, and he examined his older brother-in-law's new scans.

'You don't need to be too smug. Be careful little Na doesn't dump you. It's good you tasted a bit of suffering to teach you that women aren't easy to bully. Next time it won't be easy for you to console little Na,' Liu Nan said.

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. 'What suffering? What consoling?'

'Oh? Then you're impressive,' Liu Nan said sarcastically.

'I didn't need to do anything. She knows I'm a good man. After she realised she made a mistake she immediately came back to me,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Liu Nan scoffed and she walked away from Shi Dan Ping's smug face.

The hospital transferred Na Hao from Lam Hai to a good hospital room and booked Na Hao's surgery that day because of the old chief Shi and Dr Shi Dan Ping's special request.

Shi Dan Ping walked into his older brother-in-law's hospital room and he saw the little rabbit sat in front of his brother-in-law's bed.

'Na Na, the hospital approved my request to waive Na Hao's operating fee. The hospital will report Na Hao's surgery as a charity case,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Na Hao's surgery doesn't need to be a charity case. Na Hao's compensation money for the car accident is enough to pay for the surgery,' Na Na said.

'Na Hao's surgery fee is a high five figure number. Later there will be post-surgery rehabilitation fees. It's obvious in the past you used most of Na Hao's

compensation money to pay for Na Hao's stay at Lam Hai otherwise you wouldn't need to look for affordable places near the hospital for you and the little meatball to live together,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'But why would the hospital out of the blue pay for Na Hao's surgery? Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping sighed. He took off the little rabbit's nursing cap and he stroked her hair. 'Na Na, you don't have to worry about paying for Na Hao's surgery.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't say that it was only right for the hospital to pay for Na Hao's surgery because the hospital's staff were partly responsible for the car accident. Although the hospital valued his opinion, it was his dad's opinion that had a heavier influence which was why the hospital agreed for Na Hao's surgery to be a charity case.

'Thank you Doctor Shi,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping put the little rabbit's nursing cap back on her head. He coughed awkwardly. 'Don't thank me too soon. Na Hao's surgery is free but you'll need to pay for services to prepare for Na Hao's surgery. There is no guarantee if Na Hao's surgery will be successful. You need to wait to see if Na Hao wakes up in a stable condition before you thank me.'

That morning Shi Dan Ping asked his dad to come to the hospital to help him and his colleagues review his older brother-in-law's surgery plan.

Shi Huai Ren supported his son's thorough plan. He agreed Na Hao's surgery should be scheduled that day, because Na Hao's new scans showed the steel moved deeper into Na Hao's brain since a year ago and if Na Hao's surgery was delayed any longer there would be no chance for Na Hao to wake up.

Shi Dan Ping followed his colleagues who were transferring Na Hao into the operating room.

Na Na wanted to go into the operating room but Shi Dan Ping stopped her.

'Na Na, you can't come in,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Why? I can help sterilize the medical equipment... I... Doctor Shi, rest assured I won't interfere with the surgery if I'm inside the operating room,' Na Na said.

‘You can’t. You’re the patient’s family member. You need to follow the hospital’s protocols and stay outside the operating room,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Then can I stay inside the operating room and stand in a far corner to be my big brother’s guardian? I can’t bear to wait outside the operating room not knowing anything...’ Na Na said. She turned to look at Dr Shi senior. ‘Uncle Shi please persuade Doctor Shi that I need to be by my big brother’s side.’

Shi Dan Ping held the little rabbit’s shaky shoulders. ‘Na Na, listen to me. I promise I will do my best. But if you’re inside the operating room, I will be distracted. I don’t want you to see your big brother’s brain opened and blood flowing out. If something unexpected happens you’ll affect me and our colleagues inside the operating room, which is why you need to wait patiently outside the operating room.’

‘But...’ Na Na said.

‘Listen to me, stay outside. Didn’t you say you believe in me? If you do believe in me then wait patiently outside,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na bit her lips and she nodded her head. ‘I... I’ll stay outside and wait.’

Shi Dan Ping kissed the little rabbit’s forehead and he walked into the operating room.

Shi Huai Ren wore blue scrubs for the first time since he retired and he felt like he never left the hospital.

Shi Dan Ping washed his hands like he always did before a surgery. But for the first time he felt nauseous whilst washing his hands.

Shi Huai Ren looked at his son and he was worried. ‘Are you mentally prepared?’

Shi Dan Ping frowned. ‘Dad, why aren’t you washing your hands?’

Shi Huai Ren shook his head. ‘I came here today because I want to give you moral support.’

‘I... Dad, I want you to supervise the surgery. If you see I’m about to make a mistake, I want you to take over the surgery,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

It was the first time Shi Huai Ren heard his son called him ‘dad’ at the hospital,

and he knew his son was making a request as a son instead of as his junior doctor.

Shi Huai Ren patted his son's shoulder. 'I know if you decided to perform the surgery it means you prepared well. I don't want to be in the way and make you doubt your decisions. Doctor Shi, you need to see me as your senior inside the operating room, not as your dad.'

Shi Huai Ren didn't know when his son matured from a little boy who resented him and his wife for being devoted to patients. But he felt proud of his son who stood tall in front of him.

'Doctor Shi you don't need to underestimate yourself in front of me. Apart from me having more years of experience than you, your surgical skills are on par with my surgical skills. I believe even without me, you can succeed,' Shi Huai Ren said.

The anaesthetist signalled he checked the anaesthetic machine.

'Doctor Shi, are you mentally prepared?' Shi Huai Ren asked.

'No,' Shi Dan Ping said and he ran away from the operating table.

'Doctor Shi, where are you going? The anaesthetist is prepared,' Shi Huai Ren said.

'I'll be back soon,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping ran outside and he stood in front of the little rabbit who looked anxious.

'Doctor Shi? What's wrong? Is my big brother-' Na Na asked.

'Your big brother is ok. The surgery hasn't started,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Then why did come outside?' Na Na asked.

'Na Na, I want you to promise me something. I want you to promise me whether the surgery is a success or a failure that you won't let it affect our relationship and that you won't leave me,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Doctor Shi, I'm sorry I can't make that promise,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping was breathless because his biggest fear was a reality.

‘Because I believe in you. I believe you won’t disappoint me and you will do your best, which is why I don’t need to make that promise. You’re one of the best neurosurgeons in the country. Since I’ve worked with you, I know you well enough that you won’t walk into an operating room unless you are prepared,’ Na Na said.

Na Na took a deep breath. She stood on her toes and she kissed Shi Dan Ping’s lips. ‘I know you are mentally prepared.’

Shi Dan Ping heard the little rabbit’s words of reassurance and he felt her soft lips so his heart was at peace.

‘Go back inside. I’ll wait here for you,’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping bit the little rabbit’s lips. ‘After the surgery you need to thank me properly.’

Na Na nodded her head. ‘Ok.’

‘You’ll shower and thank me properly in bed,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Ok...’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping exhaled gently and he walked back inside the operating room.

Inside the operating room Zhang Wei Dong and Shi Dan An wore blue scrubs and they stood beside Shi Huai Ren at a distance from the operating table as moral support for Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping stood in front of the operating table. He took a deep breath and he signalled to his colleagues to start the surgery.

End of Chapter Fifty-Eight

Related

Fifty-Nine

Chapter Fifty-Nine

It was passed fifteen hours since the surgery started.

The steel had been inside Na Hao's brain for more than a year, and it wasn't a surprise that parts of the steel was stuck to some areas of the brain.

'Doctor Shi, you need to take a short break,' Shi Huai Ren said.

Shi Dan Ping didn't lift his head and he spoke firmly to the surgical nurse next to him. 'Give me the surgical scalpel blade number two.'

Shi Dan An saw her big brother held the scalpel, but he didn't move his hand and she was worried. 'What's wrong?'

'The bottom of the steel that's left is too close to an artery and too close to the Broca's area and if I take it out it can affect the patient's speech,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Then what's going to happen now?' Shi Dan An asked.

'I'll take a short break,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'But the patient has been unconscious for a long time. The patient's heart is too weak-' Shi Dan An said.

'If I want to continue, it's necessary to let the patient's heart stop beating to slow down the blood flow to prevent an aneurysm. Otherwise the patient will die no matter how I take the bottom of the steel out of the patient's brain,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan An silently looked at her dad and her dad nodded his head.

Shi Dan An took a deep breath and she turned to face the director of the cardiology department. 'I'll help you monitor the patient's heart.'

The cardiologist reluctantly nodded his head. He was worried about the patient's weak heart, but Zhang Wei Dong said that Shi Dan Ping was leading the patient's surgery and all medical staff inside the operating room needed to follow Shi Dan Ping's instructions.

Shi Dan Ping resumed the surgery after Na Hao's heart stopped beating.

'Doctor Shi, you have half an hour to take out the bottom of the steel,' Shi Dan An said.

'Ok,' Shi Dan Ping said.

After Shi Dan Ping carefully took out the bottom of the steel everyone in the operating room were relieved.

Outside the operating room Na Na waited anxiously without eating.

Wei Zhexue bought a meal and a bottle of water for Na Na. He opened the bottle of water and he passed it to Na Na. 'Even if you can't eat, you need to drink a bit of water.'

Na Na knew Wei Zhexue was worried about her so she forced herself to drink a sip of water. 'Wei Zhexue, what do you think the situation is inside the operating room?'

'Na Na, you don't need to worry. The hospital arranged for the best doctors in the country to be inside the operating room for your big brother's surgery. Even uncle Shi is inside the operating room. Your big brother is in good hands,' Wei Zhexue said.

'I know everyone who is inside the operating room. What I want to know is what step of the surgery are they up to inside the operating room,' Na Na said.

Wei Zhexue knew his words of comfort to Na Na was futile, because he wasn't certain about the outcome of Na Hao's surgery either. 'Na Na, you should eat something. After the surgery there will be many things you need to do and you'll need your strengths. I'll go check on little Yuan for a bit. Is Mao Dan looking after little Yuan?'

'Thank you Wei Zhexue,' Na Na said.

Wei Zhexue patted Na Na's shoulder and he walked outside the hospital.

Inside the operating room Shi Dan Ping was satisfied his brother-in-law's scalp was stitched securely and he signalled to his colleagues that it was the end of the surgery. Then he took two steps away from the operating table, he squatted and he took off his surgical hat and he threw up continuously into his surgical hat.

End of Chapter Fifty-Nine

Related

Sixty

Chapter Sixty

Shi Dan An showered and she walked outside the change room. She saw her big brother leaned on Na Na. She thought her big brother looked like a corpse and Na Na looked at her big brother like he was an angel.

‘Big brother, old chief Shi is coming out soon. Don’t let him see you acting like a baby unless you want him to kick you to death,’ Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan Ping shivered because there were still bruises on his body.

Shi Dan An was always considerate toward gentle humans like Na Na. ‘Na Na, you were anxious the whole day. You should go home and rest.’

‘I didn’t do anything. It’s you and everyone else that deserve a good rest,’ Na Na said. She offered Shi Dan An food and water. ‘Doctor Shi, are you thirty or hungry?’

Shi Dan Ping silently buried his head between the little rabbit’s neck and shoulder.

Shi Dan An laughed at her big brother’s PDA and she accepted the cup of water Na Na poured for her and the box of chocolates. ‘Thank you. I’m leaving first. You and my big brother should make an escape before the old chief Shi comes out.’

Na Na waved bye to Shi Dan An.

‘Are you feeling better? We should go home,’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping thought if his dad came out and dragged him and the little rabbit to his parent’s home then he couldn’t receive a reward from the little rabbit. ‘Um. Help me stand and we can go home.’

When Shi Dan Ping arrived home he collapsed on the sofa and he didn’t see or hear the little meatball at home. ‘Who is looking after the little meatball?’

Na Na poured Shi Dan Ping a glass of water in the kitchen and she walked to the living room to give the glass of water to him. ‘Mao Dan is looking after little

Yuan. Later I'll go pick him up.'

Shi Dan Ping drank the glass of water and he felt a bit better.

Na Na walked to the bathroom. She poured warm water into a bowl and she carried the bowl and a clean towel to the living room. She wet the towel and used it to clean Shi Dan Ping's face and neck.

Shi Dan Ping took off his shirt. Na Na blushed but she was surprised there were bruises on his back.

'Na Na, are you scrubbing laundry? Can't you see the difference between human skin and dirty clothes? Take a look at my skin, it's all red,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na blew on Shi Dan Ping's red skin. 'Why do you have bruises on your body?'

'It's nothing. A few days ago I saw a robber on the street and I fought with the robber,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Wow! I didn't think you were so heroic,' Na Na said.

'You didn't think I was heroic?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na laughed awkwardly. 'Hehe... I meant you're always heroic. But I didn't think you would stop a robber from robbing a stranger on the street.'

Shi Dan Ping propped his legs on the little rabbit's lap. 'Scrub my feet too.'

Na Na saw the bulge in the middle of Shi Dan Ping's pants and she was flustered. 'I... I should go pick up little Yuan. It's late and Mao Dan needs rest.'

The little rabbit threw the wet towel on Shi Dan Ping's face and she ran outside. 'Little rascal, you ruined uncle's reward!'

At the hospital Na Yuan laid happily on the bed in the staff room. He was drawing and colouring on the bed. Mao Dan was glad it wasn't her bed or veins would protrude on her face.

Na Yuan yawned. 'Aunty Mao. Why isn't little aunt here to pick me up?'

'Little Yuan, you can call me big sister. Be good, your little aunt needs to take care of your daddy. She'll be here soon,' Mao Dan said.

Mao Dan heard the door open and she laughed because ‘speak of Cao Cao and Cao Cao arrives’ was true.

Na Yuan jumped off the bed and he ran to his little aunt.

Na Na’s stomach braced little Yuan’s head and she winced. ‘Little Yuan, recently you’re chubbier. In the future I can’t let you eat junk food at night.’

‘Little aunt is bad! I’m not chubby. I’m loveable,’ Na Yuan protested.

‘Um, little Yuan is loveable,’ Na Na said. She put the little rascal back on the bed and she put on his shoes. ‘Let’s go. Auntie Mao needs rest. Say farewell to auntie Mao.’

‘I’m big sister!’ Mao Dan protested.

Na Yuan laughed and he jumped off the bed. ‘Bye auntie Mao! See you later.’

Mao Dan glared at the little rascal who ran outside to say bye to the other nurses.

‘How was your big brother’s surgery? Is your big brother awake?’ Mao Dan asked.

‘Doctor Shi said my big brother’s surgery was successful and he’ll wake up within forty-eight hours,’ Na Na said.

Na Na’s head hurt when she saw the bed was stained. She packed little Yuan’s stationary and books into his bag. ‘Thank you for looking after little Yuan today. Have a good rest.’

‘I will. Be careful on the way home. You have a good rest too,’ Mao Dan said.

Na Na took little Yuan home. She didn’t see Shi Dan Ping on the sofa so she checked his bedroom, he was asleep on his bed.

Na Na bathed little Yuan in the guest bathroom and she told him to go sleep in his bedroom.

Na Yuan nodded his head and he ran outside the bathroom. But he didn’t want to go to his bedroom, he wanted to see uncle.

Na Yuan tiptoed into uncle’s bedroom. He was shocked uncle slept naked on the bed. Then he was curious about why uncle’s pee pee bird was a lot bigger

than his. He crawled onto uncle's bed and he squeezed uncle's pee pee bird.

'Ah!' Shi Dan Ping cried out.

Na Na rushed to Shi Dan Ping's bedroom. 'What's wrong-'

'Little aunt, quickly come here. Uncle's pee pee bird is very dark and looks ugly,' Na Yuan said.

Na Na was speechless.

Shi Dan Ping rescued his pee pee bird from the little meatball's clutch and he wrapped the bedsheet around his naked body.

'Auntie Mao said if a male's pee pee bird is big and ugly then he's a little prince, but if a male's pee pee bird is small and adorable then he's a little pet. My pee pee bird is small and adorable compared to uncle's pee pee bird. Then I'm a little pet, is that right little aunt?'

'Mao-Dan! I want to kill you!' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping laughed. 'I told you long ago, little Yuan needs to be educated and disciplined with firm reasoning while he's young. Take a look at little Yuan now, his psychological growth is affected. In the future if little Yuan grows up to be abnormal then you'll be the one regretting.'

Na Na panicked. 'What should I do now?'

Shi Dan Ping pulled the little meatball closer to him. 'Little Yuan, listen carefully and remember what uncle is about to tell you. When you're an adult you need to be humble. A man can't rely on his pee pee bird to distinguish himself.'

Na Yuan didn't understand what uncle was saying, but he nodded his head. 'Uncle, I promise I'll remember.'

Shi Dan Ping passed the little meatball to the little rabbit. 'Do you see? You only need to reason with little Yuan and he'll understand.'

Na Na silently got another bedsheet from a cupboard and she covered little Yuan's body. Little Yuan laid on his side and he hugged Shi Dan Ping. She patted little Yuan's back until he slept but she didn't lay on the bed.

Shi Dan Ping opened his drowsy eyes. He pulled the little rabbit onto the bed.

He laid in between the little rabbit and the little meatball and he hugged the little rabbit to sleep. That night was the first peaceful sleep he had since the last few days.

End of Chapter Sixty

Related

Sixty-One

Chapter Sixty-One

Shi Dan Ping woke up and the little meatball's saliva covered his arm. He squeezed the little meatball's chubby arms and chubby cheeks.

Shi Dan Ping didn't see the little rabbit and he didn't hear any noises from the kitchen. He panicked and he jumped out of bed. He nearly tripped over, but he ran around the house. He didn't see the little rabbit anywhere. He rang her phone.

'Where are you?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'I'm at the hospital. Didn't you see the note I left on the dining table for you? I cooked breakfast for you and little Yuan before I left, it's in the oven. It's cold today, remember to pick warm clothes for little Yuan to wear,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping found the little rabbit's note and his body relaxed. 'Why are you at the hospital this early? You're not on duty until this evening.'

'I was worried about my big brother. I woke up early, because I wanted to see him. I'm hanging up,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping hung up the phone and he walked back to his bedroom.

Na Yuan was woken up by uncle who squeezed his arms and cheeks. 'Uncle, I hate you.'

Shi Dan Ping knew it was his fault the little meatball woke up early. He quickly put on his clothes. He walked to the little meatball's room and he chose warm clothes for the little meatball. He walked back to his bedroom and he helped the little meatball wear warm clothes.

'Uncle, where is little aunt?' Na Yuan asked.

Shi Dan Ping carried the little meatball to the bathroom. 'She's at the hospital. You're a young man, you can brush your teeth and wash your face on your own. Come outside to eat breakfast after you brush and wash.'

At the hospital inside Na Hao's room, Na Na massaged Na Hao's arms and she

rested her head on Na Hao's shoulder.

Na Na lifted her head and she saw Shi Dan Ping who looked grumpy. She smiled sweetly. 'Are you here to check up on Na Hao? Is Na Hao ok? Where's little Yuan.'

Shi Dan Ping took the little meatball to the hospital with him, because the little meatball didn't need to go to childcare that day. 'Little Yuan is outside playing with head nurse Liu and the other nurses.'

Shi Dan Ping examined Na Hao. 'Your big brother's heart is weak, but he's not in a critical condition. Later I'll ask Shi Dan An to check up on him.'

Na Na stroked her big brother's sunken cheeks. 'I'm happy I can keep my promise to little Yuan.'

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit. 'You took good care of your big brother.'

'Thank you Doctor Shi! You saved my big brother's life. You gave little Yuan his daddy back and you gave back my big brother. I don't know what else I can do to show you I'm grateful except thanking you,' Na Na said.

'You can use your body to thank me. You said you would thank me, but last night I didn't see you shower and lay on my bed ready to thank me. If you lie to me, your nose will grow longer,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'I did shower but last night wasn't it you who was dead asleep?' Na Na asked.

'Even if I performed a long surgery, I still have enough energy left for you,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na suspected Shi Dan Ping was boasting. She looked down at his pants.

'Don't make me prove that I'm right... in front of your big brother,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na immediately looked up and she pretended she didn't see anything.

Shi Dan Ping laughed and he knocked the little rabbit's forehead. 'You can't break your promise.'

Na Na rubbed her forehead and she smiled. 'Who said I broke my promise? Tonight I'll keep my promise and we can do anything you want.'

In that moment Shi Dan Ping wanted to eat the little rabbit. He hugged her tighter. His hand slid down her pants.

Na Na blushed and she tried to pull Shi Dan Ping's hand outside her pants. 'Not here. My big brother is here.'

Shi Dan Ping whispered in the little rabbit's ear. 'Your big brother isn't awake yet.'

Na Na was about to protest, but the door opened.

'Little aunt! Why didn't you wait for me to wake up?' Na Yuan said.

Na Na quickly adjusted her clothes and she pretended nothing happened. 'Because I woke up early and I wanted to see your daddy.'

Shi Dan Ping scoffed. The little rascal ruined his reward again! He quietly walked outside to give their family privacy.

Na Yuan saw his daddy was sleeping on a bed and he spoke softly. 'Can daddy hear us?'

'Um. Little Yuan, your daddy will wake up soon. Come here and talk to your daddy,' Na Na said.

Na Yuan hugged his little aunt. 'But daddy isn't awake yet. If I talk to daddy, can daddy really hear me?'

'Um. If you talk to your daddy he can hear what you're saying to him,' Na Na said.

Na Yuan sat on his daddy's bed. He leaned close to his daddy's ear and he talked to his daddy. He was happy to talk to his daddy even if his daddy didn't say anything.

Na Na stroked little Yuan's hair for a while and she walked outside Na Hao's room to give them alone time.

Na Na closed the door behind her. She turned around and she saw Wei Zhexue.

'Na Na, I brought you forms to sign. The hospital paid for your big brother's surgery,' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na accepted the forms from Wei Zhexue and she smiled. 'Thank you Wei Zhexue.'

Wei Zhexue saw Shi Dan Ping was striding toward him and Na Na and he smiled. 'Na Na...'

'Yes?' Na Na asked.

Wei Zhexue whispered in Na Na's ear. 'If you want to thank me then play along with me for a bit.'

Na Na was confused but Wei Zhexue held her hand and he spoke loudly. 'Shi Dan Ping that little boy has been too smug for many years. I need to at least win against him once.'

Na Na lifted her head and she saw a jealous Shi Dan Ping was striding toward her and Wei Zhexue. She felt Shi Dan Ping looked like a jealous husband who thought his wife was cheating on him. She understood what Wei Zhexue meant by playing along with Wei Zhexue and she happily obliged.

Wei Zhexue fearlessly held Na Na's hand and he laughed.

Suddenly a tall shadow stormed toward Na Na. 'You vixen! I want to avenge my dad!'

Wei Zhexue let go of Na Na's hand and he moved away from the knife aimed in their direction. He thought Na Na would react the same way as him and she would move away from the knife, but she must be too shocked and she stood motionless.

Wei Zhexue saw the knife was aimed at Na Na's chest and he panicked. But Shi Dan Ping was faster than the knife.

In a blink of an eye Shi Dan Ping lunged between the little rabbit and the knife. He hugged the little rabbit and he protected her from the knife. But the knife stabbed his back. His face was bleached white and he felt intense throbbing on his back.

End of Chapter Sixty-One

Related

part 1

Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 1)

Shi Dan An kicked the adolescent who stabbed Shi Dan Ping in the back.

Shi Dan An didn't care she injured the adolescent. She rushed to her big brother and she examined the wound on his back.

'Why is everyone doing standing around and looking lost? Wei Zhexue take that boy to security and call the police. Big sister Liu, help me bandage my big brother's back,' Shi Dan An said.

Wei Zhexue pulled the boy up off the floor and he dragged the boy to security.

Shi Dan An and Na Na brought Shi Dan Ping to the staff resting room and he sat on a bed.

Shi Dan An picked up a pair of scissors and she cut half-way down the back of her big brother's shirt. She was relieved the knife wound wasn't deep. His back was bleeding, but it didn't damage any arteries or veins. 'It's a shallow wound. Big sister Liu give me a surgical suture. Na Na give me bandages and antiseptic.'

Shi Dan An wore gloves. She saw her big brother's cut shirt was bloodied and she frowned. 'How do you feel? Can you move your arms? Your shirt is bloodied. It'll be more comfortable for you to wear a clean shirt.'

Shi Dan Ping was scared of pain and he breathed heavily.

Na Na was crying and she spoke in a choked voice. 'I'm really sorry, it's my fault.'

'It wasn't your fault! I'm ok. The boy was actually aiming the knife at me,' Shi Dan Ping denied.

Shi Dan An helped her big brother take off his shirt. 'Who was the boy? Why does he hate you two enough to use a knife to kill both of you?'

'The boy is Li Chi Sieu's son. Doctor Shi do you remember Li Chi Sieu fell and injured his head? His mum begged you to perform a second surgery but the second surgery failed,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping remembered his deceased patient clearly. 'Um. I remember, but Li Chi Sieu's son should have aimed his anger at me. It had nothing to do with you-'

'Ah!' Liu Nan cried out.

Liu Nan saw Shi Dan Ping's bloodied back she was more shocked to see the bruises on his back.

'Head nurse Liu, what happened?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

'Little Ping, I didn't know you had that kind of fetish,' Liu Nan said.

Na Na was confused. She looked at Shi Dan Ping who was frowning.

Shi Dan An laughed and she couldn't hold the needle steady in her hand. 'Hehe... big sister Liu, my big brother loves that kind of fetish!'

Liu Nan couldn't believe Shi Dan Ping's back was black and blue. 'I didn't know... I thought little Na was a gentle little rabbit... but I didn't expect little Na would be so forceful! Even if you two are newlyweds, you two need to hold back a bit. Although intimacy is important in a relationship, but you two shouldn't do anything too dangerous.' She turned to face Na Na. 'Little Ping's skin is tender. Little Na, if you want to punish little Ping you need to be less forceful.'

'Head nurse Liu, it's a misunderstanding. Doctor Shi's back wasn't bruised from bondage activities. Doctor Shi was helping a stranger who was being robbed, and he fought with the robber which is why there are bruises on his back,' Na Na said.

'Hehe... that's just a cover story. If my big brother was scared of pain, he wouldn't fight with a robber. Otherwise he would be squirming instead of treating a stab in the back like it was only a child's tiny toy knife that stabbed his back,' Shi Dan An said.

Liu Nan nodded her head. 'That's right. Little Na, why are you more dishonest by the day? It's true that if near ink, you will be black. Why do you only know how to take on little Ping's bad traits? The bruises on his back can only be from you whipping his back.'

Na Na looked pitifully at Shi Dan Ping.

That afternoon a rumour was circulated around the hospital that Dr Shi junior the neurosurgeon loved bondage.

Shi Dan Ping wanted to cry. He didn't understand why he received so many abnormal titles! He realised it started since he met the little rabbit.

Shi Dan An was an expert stitcher. Even her critical big brother couldn't fault her stitching skills.

'Na Na, don't let my big brother's wound get wet for... you two already know the drill and don't need me to tell you. Hehe... but I need to remind you two to be less forceful with each other for a few days otherwise the wound will need new stitches,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan Ping glared at his little sister. 'Too nosy!'

Shi Dan An scoffed, but she thought she mocked her big brother enough and she left the room.

End of Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 2 of 2)

Na Na visited Li Chi Sieu's son at security.

'He refuses to say anything,' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na stood at a distance to Li Chi Sieu's son. 'Is your grandma well?'

The sixteen year old boy lifted his head and he looked resentfully at Na Na.

'Why did you do something foolish? What about your grandma?' Na Na asked.

The boy stood and he wanted to charge at Na Na but Wei Zhexue held him back. The boy pointed a finger at Na Na's face. 'You vixen! I don't need you to care! You and Shi Dan Ping are dirty like each other-'

Wei Zhexue pushed the boy onto a seat. 'Speak cleaner!'

'Did you do something foolish because Doctor Shi failed to save your dad? Doctor Shi explained to your grandma it was a high risk surgery, but your grandma was adamant she wanted the surgery for your dad and Doctor Shi agreed to perform the surgery-' Na Na said.

'No! It's you and Shi Dan Ping's fault! I know you and him are in it together! Your big brother was unconscious for a year but he's alive. Why did my dad had to die? It's because of you! Shi Dan Ping did everything to save your big brother because of you! It's your fault! If it wasn't for you, Shi Dan Ping wouldn't be distracted and my dad wouldn't die! You and Shi Dan Ping killed my dad!' the boy said.

Na Na didn't know how to explain that each patient's symptoms are different to the boy. Even if the surgical procedures were identical for patients, unexpected things happened for each surgery. Shi Dan Ping didn't want Li Chi Sieu to die. There was no doctor who wanted their patient to die.

'You're an educated youth but you're not as wise as your grandma. If you want revenge, why aren't you hating your dad? He didn't wear a helmet and he wasn't careful and fell. Why aren't you hating your dad's workplace? His workplace

didn't provide a safe workplace, which could have prevented your dad's fall,' Wei Zhexue said.

The boy wanted to hit Wei Zhexue.

'You're actually a smart youth!' Wei Zhexue said sarcastically. 'You know the limits of your strengths that's why you wanted to assault a weaker nurse. You call yourself a man, but you used a knife against a defenceless female. Your dad would be ashamed to call you his son!'

The boy cried out, he held his head and he cried.

Na Na hated that the boy attempted to kill her and Shi Dan Ping. But she knew the boy was grieving because he lost his dad. She couldn't help but pity him. She stepped closer to the boy and she waved Wei Zhexue's arm away.

'If you continue this way, how will your dad be at peace? You're old enough to understand before it was your dad's responsibility to take care of your grandma. But your dad isn't here anymore and it's now your responsibility to take care of your grandma. I know you didn't want to kill anyone. I'm really sorry your dad couldn't be saved, but everyone did their best to save your dad. If you want to avenge your dad then study and work toward a bright future and not disappoint your dad who raised you to be a good person. Your dad overworked and risked his life because he wanted to provide a good life for you and your grandma, he never wanted to fall. His fall was an accident,' Na Na said.

'Dad!' the boy called.

Everyone in the room felt the devastation in the boy's voice.

Wei Zhexue and Na Na walked outside.

'What's wrong?' Na Na asked.

'Nothing. I understand why I lost,' Wei Zhexue said.

Wei Zhexue remembered the knife incident. He let go of Na Na's hand, but Shi Dan Ping didn't hesitate to lunge and protect Na Na. Wei Zhexue understood in dangerous situations each person would react using their instincts.

Wei Zhexue at that moment thought it was best to let go and he expected Na Na to avoid the knife. But Shi Dan Ping didn't think about avoiding the knife, he

used his body to shield Na Na. Shi Dan Ping acted foolishly but Shi Dan Ping saved Na Na.

Wei Zhexue thought he was compatible with Na Na more than Shi Dan Ping. He thought he was good natured and more patient than Shi Dan Ping. He thought he could take care of Na Na and make her happier than Shi Dan Ping. But he realised in reality he couldn't take care of Na Na and make her happier than Shi Dan Ping. Shi Dan Ping loved Na Na more than he could love Na Na.

Na Na listened to Wei Zhexue's reasoning.

'Wei Zhexue, I never suspected your feelings for me wasn't sincere. Compared to Doctor Shi, you and I are more selfish. Despite Doctor Shi refused many patients' family members' pleas to save patients that can't be saved, but it takes someone selfless to be realistic to help another person deal with the reality of their situation,' Na Na said.

'I believe you. Shi Dan Ping does have a good heart,' Wei Zhexue said grudgingly.

'Wei Zhexue you're a good person. Each person is different. Some people are a little more concerned about themselves and that's understandable,' Na Na said.

Wei Zhexue laughed at himself. 'I'm ashamed I'm someone who is more concerned about myself.'

'I'm not criticising you. I'm not like Doctor Shi. Although I care about patients, but the biggest part of me care because it's part of my work duties. Honestly, I'm not a good person,' Na Na said.

'Ok, you should go back to the impatient Shi Dan Ping,' Wei Zhexue said.

Na Na said bye to Wei Zhexue and she ran back to Shi Dan Ping.

The following couple of days Na Na was busy taking care of little Yuan, worried if her big brother was going to wake up and looking after the injured Shi Dan Ping.

Shi Dan Ping was silently worried. He knew his older brother-in-law's surgery was a success, but the longer his older brother-in-law was unconscious post-surgery made him worried. What if his older brother-in-law wasn't going to wake

up?

Shi Dan Ping feared if his older brother-in-law didn't wake up then the little rabbit would take the little meatball and leave him.

Shi Dan Ping stared at his unconscious older brother-in-law and he regretted there wasn't a drug to instantly wake up his older brother-in-law's arm so his older brother-in-law could attend his and the little rabbit's wedding.

End of Chapter Sixty-Two (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Sixty-Three

Chapter Sixty-Three

The childcare was closed for a few days.

Na Yuan was happy to sit on the bed next to his daddy's bed. He loved to talk to his daddy and he was excited his daddy was going to wake up soon.

Na Na checked on little Yuan after she was off duty. She saw little Yuan's head tilted down. She laid little Yuan down on the bed next to Na Hao's bed and she patted little Yuan's back until he fell asleep.

Shi Dan Ping closely monitored Na Hao's progress. He was worried it was the fifth day since Na Hao's surgery, but Na Hao was still unconscious.

Shi Dan Ping knew the little rabbit couldn't sleep for the last two nights. Her eyes were red and her face wasn't as round, it was a little gaunt. He made her a warm cup of milk and he walked toward Na Hao's room.

Na Na sat on little Yuan's bed and she reminisced about her childhood. In the past Na Hao bought junk food for her and himself to eat on the way home from school, because their mum didn't let them eat junk food. Before they walked into their family home they always checked if there were any signs of junk food on their bodies.

During Na Na's school days, unlike her classmates her parents didn't take her to school instead Na Hao took her to school. Na Hao was a handsome young man and his female classmates had crushes on him. But Na Hao's attentions were on her, he always made sure she had everything she needed before he left her at school. She was always proud to be his little sister.

Na Na believed Na Hao was going to wake up. She looked at Na Hao's weakened body that laid still on his bed. She silently begged him not to leave her.

Shi Dan Ping entered Na Hao's room and he gave the little rabbit a cup of warm milk. 'Drink.'

Na Na didn't want to drink, but Shi Dan Ping was worried about her and she drank all the milk.

Shi Dan Ping took out a medical pen light from his pocket and he examined Na Hao closely.

‘How is he?’ Na Na asked.

‘He’s stable. He’s been unconscious for a long time so it takes his body longer to recover from a surgery. Don’t worry too much. Be good and sleep for a while,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na shook her head. ‘I want to be here. I don’t want him to wake up and not see any of his family members.’

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit. ‘It’s ok. I’ll watch over him while you sleep.’

‘In the past he always watched over me. It’s my turn to watch over him. I can’t let him wake up and not see me... Doctor Shi, little Yuan and I have talked to him for a long time. Do you think hearing our voices can wake him up?’ Na Na said.

‘What do you think? Hasn’t the little rascal been talking to him nonstop?’ Shi Dan Ping asked.

Na Na laughed. ‘I know, I’m being impatient.’

Shi Dan Ping smiled too brightly. ‘I have a solution to wake him up.’

‘A solution? Hurry up and tell me. I promise I’ll follow your solution,’ Na Na said.

‘You promise to follow my solution? Then let’s get married. I’ll sacrifice myself and marry you. My older brother-in-law only has one little sister. If you start your own family and especially with someone brilliant like me, he definitely will wake up to marry you off,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na pinched Shi Dan Ping’s waist. ‘Who would expect a doctor like you would believe in superstitions? How can you joke in a time like this?’

‘Why aren’t you keeping your promise?’ Shi Dan Ping asked. He held the little rabbit’s cheeks and he pretended he was going to kiss her. ‘Let’s do what married couples do in front of my older brother-in-law and you won’t dare to break your promise.’

Na Na covered her body with a spare bedsheet and she struggled to push Shi

Dan Ping off her. He hit her bottom and she blushed. 'Don't do anything reckless!'

'What are you scared of? No one can see us,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'You scoundrel, go away!' Na Na said.

'What scoundrel? We've done more than this before, you don't need to be embarrassed-' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Noisy...' Na Hao said.

Shi Dan Ping and Na Na felt Na Hao's soft voice sounded like an explosion.

Na Na felt like she was struck by a lightning bolt. She didn't dare to turn around in case there was something wrong with her hearing.

Shi Dan Ping reacted faster. He jumped off the bed and he checked if Na Hao was awake.

Shi Dan Ping shone a medical pen light into Na Hao's eyes.

Na Hao blinked several times. The blurriness slowly disappeared and he saw Na Na. 'Little sister... were you calling for me?'

Na Na smiled and cried. 'I hate you! Why did you give me a scare? Did you know how scared I was?'

End of Chapter Sixty-Three

Related

part 1

Side Story One (Part 1)

Shi Dan Ping covered Na Na's mouth. 'Be quiet. It's the middle of the night. Your screaming and crying scared my older brother-in-law. Look, he's unconscious again.'

Na Na stopped crying. She pulled Shi Dan Ping's hand away from her mouth. 'Quickly go check on my big brother.'

Shi Dan Ping examined Na Hao and he was happy Na Hao was stable. 'My older brother-in-law's body is weak, but he woke up which means he'll be ok.'

Na Na held Shi Dan Ping's hand and she cried onto his warm palm.

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit and he patted her back. 'What are you crying for? He's ok. Now do you believe me? He knew we're getting married and he wanted to wake up to give you away. Sometimes unexpected things happen in mysterious ways.'

Shi Dan Ping lifted the little rabbit's chin. He wiped tears off her face. 'Why don't we continue? It could be he was shocked I was taking advantage of his little sister and he woke up.'

Na Na laughed and she hit Shi Dan Ping's hand. 'Scoundrel!'

Several days passed since Na Hao woke up. Na Hao's body was weak but he was awake for longer periods each day.

Na Yuan was the happiest his daddy woke up. He thought his daddy woke up, because he talked a lot to his daddy.

Na Hao's head hurt, but he could sit up and rest his back against a pillow. He happily listened to his son talk.

Shi Dan An visited Na Hao a few times. Na Hao's heart was weak, but she was happy with his progress.

Na Yuan was happy his daddy was awake, because his daddy was his bodyguard against uncle's teasing. 'Little aunt treats me good. But uncle is a bad

wolf. Uncle always teases little aunt and me.'

Na Yuan used his spoon to feed his daddy food. But his arm was short and half of the food on the spoon fell out.

Na Hao smiled and he held his son's spoon. 'Precious darling is good! You know how to feed food for your daddy. Daddy wants to feed himself for a bit. Can you help daddy bring the tray of food closer to me?'

Na Yuan thought his daddy was weak, but it was ok if his daddy held a light spoon. He nodded his head and he brought the tray of food closer to his daddy.

Na Hao struggled to sit upright and hold a spoon. But what made him sad was he didn't see his wife and her parents come to visit him. Na Na didn't mention them, but in his heart he knew what happened to them.

Na Hao struggled the most to cope with the unexpected changes since he woke up, but he wanted to appreciate the beautiful blessings in his life. He had his son and little sister who loved him and he wasn't ready to leave them behind.

Na Yuan sat on his daddy's bed. He munched on an apple and sometimes he would let his daddy take a bite. He talked and laughed with his daddy.

Na Hao listened to his son talk about the bad uncle Shi Dan Ping. Everything from hitting his son's bottom and what his son saw in the bathroom. He could only laugh and respond 'oh?' and 'anything else?' and his son would talk more about the bad uncle Shi Dan Ping.

'Daddy, you don't know how hateful uncle is! Uncle always says that I'm chubby and he even nicknamed me little meatball! Daddy, am I really chubby?' Na Yuan said.

Na Hao rubbed his son's head. 'How can you be chubby? Little Yuan is a loveable and a handsome little wolf. I haven't seen you for a year and you grew a lot taller!'

Na Yuan nodded his head and he continued to munch on his apple. 'I know I'm loveable and handsome. At childcare everyday there is always a little girl who follows me and she wants me to marry her.'

'Oh? Did you say yes to the little girl?' Na Hao asked.

Na Yuan shook his head. 'I said no, because Ming Ming is chubby and not pretty.'

Na Hao was speechless. His lips quivered because he wanted to laugh. He couldn't believe his shameless son insulted another child for being chubby. He felt his son suffered since he was unconscious for more than a year. His son had a lot of stories to tell him.

Na Na arrived at Na Hao's room to collect the tray of food. 'Big brother, are you full?'

Na Hao smiled and he nodded his head. 'Little sister, you are turning me into a pig! If you're not in a hurry, sit down and talk to your big brother.'

Na Na cleared the tray of food. She washed her hands and she sat on Na Hao's bed next to little Yuan. 'How are you feeling? Do you feel any discomfort anywhere? Do you want to rest for a while?'

Na Hao laughed. 'I'm ok. I slept for more than a year. My bones are about to rot. You don't need to worry, my body is ok. But the last year has been hard on you.'

'Big brother! You took care of me for many years. It's only right for me to take care of little Yuan. Besides, the last year wasn't too hard on me,' Na Na said. She rubbed little Yuan's head and she smiled. 'We're a family. Little Yuan is my nephew. Big brother, one hundred thousand times don't think that you burdened me!'

Na Hao felt it didn't matter how old his little sister was he always wanted to protect her. He pinched her cheek. 'When I was unconscious I heard you cry enough to frustrate me. I was gone for a little while and you would cry nonstop. I felt you were suffering and I couldn't do anything else but wake up!' He rubbed his little sister's head. 'I heard you were bullied by someone and I wanted to wake up and help you.'

Na Na blushed and cried.

Na Hao laughed. 'Enough, I'm ok. I know Doctor Shi saved my life. I haven't said thank you to him properly.'

Na Na didn't know if she felt awkward because she was close to both her big

brother and Shi Dan Ping... or if it was because the thought of 'thank you' made her feel embarrassed.

'What is there for you to feel embarrassed about?' Na Hao asked.

Na Na avoided eye contact with Na Hao.

Na Hao laughed. 'Little Yuan told me a lot. It's pointless to have a daughter. After she lives with her husband's family, she'll forget about her maiden family.'

'Big brother! Why are you teasing me? Doctor Shi and I... are living together,' Na Na said.

'What? Don't tell me, you used your body to save your big brother,' Na Hao said.

'No! Big brother, it's not like that. Before your surgery, he and I were already living together,' Na Na said.

'But why have I been hearing he's bad natured? Not only does he bully you every day, but he even dare to kick you and little Yuan out of his house,' Na Hao said.

Na Na secretly glared at the little rascal. She couldn't believe the little rascal dared to talk bad behind her back! 'Big brother, it was a misunderstanding!'

'It doesn't matter if it there was a misunderstanding. That's no way to treat a woman and a child. Little sister you shouldn't be too soft. A man will be unruly when a woman dotes on him too much,' Na Hao said.

Na Na lowered her head and she didn't refute her big brother's words.

Shi Dan Ping was off duty and he went to look for the little rabbit in the staff resting room, but she wasn't there and he knew she was spending time with his older brother-in-law.

Shi Dan Ping stepped into his older brother-in-law's room and as he expected the lively family of three were talking and laughing together. He felt a little resentful after his brother-in-law's surgery, because the little rabbit neglected him.

Shi Dan Ping was also a little resentful, because the little meatball attached himself to his daddy since his daddy woke up! He realised his bond with the little

meatball couldn't compete with the little meatball's biological daddy.

Shi Dan Ping sighed on the inside. He felt he took care and fed the little meatball into a chubbier little meatball in vain. In a blink of an eye the little meatball saw his older brother-in-law and he was cast aside.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little meatball talked nonstop, munched and an apple and the little meatball didn't forget to occasionally offer his older brother-in-law a bite or fed his older brother-in-law grapes!

Shi Dan Ping saw the happy family of three and he was jealous.

Shi Dan Ping felt the little meatball was a liar! Before his brother-in-law woke up, the little meatball wanted to hug him to sleep but it was all a lie! He never seen the little meatball suck up to him or be filial toward him. The little meatball didn't feed him apples or grapes. The little meatball knew he loved to eat grapes!

End of Side Story One (Part 1)

Related

part 2

Side Story One (Part 2 of 2)

‘Doctor Shi, you’re a busy man. Thank you for taking time out of your busy schedule to visit me,’ Na Hao said.

Na Hao gave Shi Dan Ping an I-know-who-you-came-to-see look.

‘Big brother, you don’t need to be courteous. I’m merely here to visit a patient that I spent more than twenty-four hours monitoring and operating on,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping gave Na Hao a give-me-back-my-woman-and-child look.

Na Hao raised an eyebrow and he smiled. ‘Doctor Shi, you want me to repay you?’

‘A doctor’s duty is to save people. Saving you is my duty. I wouldn’t dream of wanting you to repay me for saving your life,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Hao laughed. ‘Doctor Shi, don’t you know how to joke. Are all doctors the same? No sense of humour?’

Na Na laughed awkwardly.

Shi Dan Ping coughed. ‘Na Na, the bed patient number thirty-six body temperature is slightly high. Go check on him.’

‘Little aunt finished working for the day,’ Na Yuan said.

Shi Dan Ping glared at the little meatball. He wanted to say to the little meatball – ‘Now that you have your daddy, you forgot all about uncle!’

Through Shi Dan Ping’s jealous eyes he saw Na Hao happily sat against the bedhead, the little meatball was filial to Na Hao and the little rabbit chatted happily with Na Hao and the little meatball. The three of them was a family, there was no room for him in their family.

Shi Dan Ping’s lonely heart ached. ‘I’m sorry, I forgot... the three of you continue what you were doing, I won’t intrude.’

Shi Dan Ping strode out of Na Hao's room to look for his lonely corner.

Na Hao stared at Shi Dan Ping's back that was fading. Na Hao wanted to say to Shi Dan Ping – 'Don't think I was unconscious I didn't know anything! Don't think I didn't know how you opened your mouth to say hurtful things! Don't think I didn't know you wanted to kidnap my adorable little sister!'

Na Na sat for a while and she felt restless. 'Big brother, I'm going outside for a bit.'

Na Hao smiled and he pretended he didn't know where his little sister wanted to go. 'Go ahead. I know it's boring to death staying in a hospital room.'

'Big brother, it's not like that. I'll be right back,' Na Na said.

'Um,' Na Hao said.

Na Na walked outside Na Hao's room and she found Shi Dan Ping in the staff resting room.

Shi Dan Ping sat on a chair inside the lonely the staff resting room.

Na Na poured Shi Dan Ping a cup of coffee and she put it on the table. 'Doctor Shi, what's wrong? Are you tired?'

Shi Dan Ping shook his head and he sighed.

Na Na understood Shi Dan Ping felt lonely. She stood behind his chair and she wrapped her arms around his neck.

'The little meatball never fed me grapes before,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na understood Shi Dan Ping truly saw little Yuan as his son. Most days he teased and insulted little Yuan, but she knew he loved little Yuan bone deep. But it didn't matter how much he loved little Yuan, he couldn't be more important than Na Hao in little Yuan's heart.

Shi Dan Ping knew it was unreasonable to feel like someone stole his son, but he couldn't stop himself from being jealous and lonely.

Na Na rested her chin on Shi Dan Ping's shoulder and she pressed her face against his face. 'Don't be sad. Little Yuan hasn't seen big brother for a long time, which is why little Yuan is attached to big brother. Little Yuan is a good

child. Inside little Yuan's heart he remembers you have been good to him.'

Shi Dan Ping didn't say anything. He was frustrated his older brother-in-law made his life hard.

Na Na bit her lips and she blushed. 'We can have our own child. I know you love children and I'm willing to give you children.'

Shi Dan Ping's body froze and he didn't know what to say.

Na Na rubbed her cheek against Shi Dan Ping's cheek. 'I love you. I want to give you a son and a daughter. I know you love me too.'

Shi Dan Ping's ears turned pink. 'You're too confident. I don't love a simpleton like you.'

Na Na laughed. 'You do love me. I know you love me.'

'I don't love you,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na felt like she was placating a child. 'Ok. If you say you don't love me then you don't love. It's enough that I love you.'

The frustrations and loneliness inside Shi Dan Ping's heart disappeared. His heart was full of love and happiness.

Shi Dan Ping hugged the little rabbit. He bit her lips and he whispered in her ear. 'When are you going to thank me with your body? I've waited for a long time... what do you think about exchanging a life for a life? Will you give me a child?'

Na Na looked shyly at Shi Dan Ping. 'Um.'

End of Side Story One (Part 2 of 2)

Related

Side Story Two

Side Story Two *Spoiler warning – PG rating*

It was the first time in Shi Dan Ping's life that he was excited to leave work... because the little rabbit was at home and he wondered how she was going to thank him.

Shi Dan Ping knew the little rabbit was nervous the first time because she was scared of pain. He thought of different scenarios the little rabbit was likely to pick because of her inexperience.

Shi Dan Ping thought about how he slept in bed with the little rabbit more often than he got to eat her that one time, it made him worry that something unexpected would happen and he would starve for longer.

At Shi Dan Ping's home Na Na was voicing her doubts on the phone with Mao Dan.

'Dan Dan, are you certain this isn't... tacky?' Na Na asked.

'What tacky monkey? Don't you understand it's called seduction? If you want to turn on Doctor Shi then you need to be tacky. Just be liberated like you've never been liberated before,' Mao Dan said.

Na Na didn't feel liberated, she was naked underneath the see-through outfit!

'Are you certain I don't need to wear underwear underneath the outfit?' Na Na asked.

'No underwear! If you wear underwear then where's the temptation?' Mao Dan said.

Na Na rubbed her hot face. 'It's... see-through.'

Mao Dan sighed. Of course it was see-through! She wanted to throttle Na Na who didn't understand temptation.

'Hurry up and prepare everything. You don't have much time left. Remember to act shy and scared but be a seductress on the inside. Men love that kind of role play,' Mao Dan said.

‘How do I act shy and scared and be a seductress on the inside?’ Na Na asked.

‘You’re killing me! Forget it. The outfit you’re wearing is half the work. Your cheeks just need to turn pink and you’ll be loveable,’ Mao Dan said.

Mao Dan didn’t want to waste her breath in vain and she hung up the phone. She laid in bed and she anticipated when Dr Shi find out she guided Na Na through the art of seduction, he’d be crying grateful tears and her life at the hospital would be smoother.

Shi Dan Ping arrived home and he didn’t see the little rabbit in the living room. He took off his shoes and he walked to his bedroom.

‘I’m here to receive my reward,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

Shi Dan Ping excitedly opened the door, but what he saw inside his bedroom froze his body.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit was blushing, her eyes were watery like she was scared. She looked like a little pet who was waiting for their owner to come home.

Shi Dan Ping glanced outside a window, it was almost sunset. Inside his bedroom the lights were turned off and the little rabbit lit candles. The little rabbit wore a light pink nurse uniform... but she wasn’t wearing underwear underneath. He stared at her chest... two hard nipples were visible.

Na Na felt self-conscious and she pulled down the hem of her thin dress to cover her bare cold thighs.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit fiddled with her dress and he wanted to pounce on her and spread her legs wide apart.

Na Na’s head was lowered... but she didn’t hear any movements from Shi Dan Ping. She was worried he was too turned on that his nose bled and he fainted.

Na Na slowly lifted her head and she looked at Shi Dan Ping’s face... he looked like he was repulsed. She was disappointed it was the start of her role play, but she failed to turn him on.

Shi Dan Ping held his breath for a while then he exhaled. ‘Na Na, do you need to wear a nurse uniform to welcome me home after work?’

Na Na was confused. She didn't understand what she did wrong.

Shi Dan Ping couldn't bear to see the little rabbit's dejected face so he looked at the ceiling for a while to compose himself. 'The moment I saw you wear a nurse uniform and my body froze. My mind was full of images from the operating room. Honestly, it's hard to raise half a point of desire.'

Na Na fumed, her embarrassment disappeared and she glared at Shi Dan Ping.

'Na Na, think about it. If I wore blue scrubs and laid on the bed to wait for you, would it turn you on?' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na was disappointed and angry, but she thought about what Shi Dan Ping said and she felt repulsed. The hospital blue scrubs were worn by many doctors. It was washed many times and thrown away after it was tattered. Most scrubs had holes and the scrub tops had a big pocket at the front. She thought if Shi Dan Ping wore scrubs on his bed, he would look like a butcher ready to chop her and sale her at the supermarkets. That thought alone made her shiver.

'Now do you see? Even you can't stand it,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na was completely dejected. 'Mao Dan taught me if I wore this and perform a role play then you'll be...'

Shi Dan Ping stood in front of the little rabbit and he smiled. 'It doesn't matter. If playing doctor and nurse repulse us, we can play something else... like master and maid?'

Na Na scoffed. 'If I get to be the mistress and you're my butler then I'll play with you.'

Na Na walked toward the door, but Shi Dan Ping hugged her from behind. His hands slowly moved up toward her chest and he ripped the top of her dress.

'Ah!' Na Na cried out. She gripped his hands. 'What are you doing?'

Shi Dan Ping blew in the little rabbit's ear and he spoke in a husky voice. 'Opening my reward.'

Na Na felt her body was lit on fire. 'You... didn't you say you weren't turned on?'

Shi Dan Ping kneaded Na Na's breasts and she felt his erect manhood pressed

against her bottom.

‘But I only need to think about you thinking of ways to please me and it’s like me ingesting Viagra and my flag will rise for you,’ Shi Dan Ping said.

‘Oh? Then you tried Viagra before?’ Na Na asked.

Shi Dan Ping wisely kept his mouth closed.

‘It’s a boosting drug but it has harmful effects,’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping ripped the bottom of the little rabbit’s dress in half.

‘Ah!’ Na Na cried out and she covered her breasts with her hands.

Shi Dan Ping smiled. He wrapped an arm around the little rabbit’s waist and he pulled her back against his chest. His free hand slid down between her legs.

Na Na’s body was limp and if Shi Dan Ping wasn’t holding her upright then she would collapse on the floor.

‘I’ll show you who doesn’t need boosting... tonight even if you beg for mercy it’ll be useless. My little maid, let your master show you what a strong master you have,’ Shi Dan Ping whispered.

Shi Dan Ping’s fingers rubbed deep inside the softest part of Na Na’s body. Her hands uncovered her breast to grip his arm and she moaned.

Na Na breathed heavily. ‘Shi... Doctor Shi... bed.’

Shi Dan Ping withdrew his fingers half-way outside. ‘Be good and call me by my name.’

‘Shi... Doctor Shi-’ Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping’s hand around the little rabbit’s waist slowly moved up toward her chest and caressed her hard nipple. ‘That’s not my name.’

Na Na gasped. ‘Dan... Ping.’

Shi Dan Ping narrowed his eyes. He withdrew his fingers all the way outside between the little rabbit’s legs and his other hand let go of her hard nipple. ‘Call me husband!’

Na Na was embarrassed to death. She bit her lips and she whispered. ‘Hus...

husband.'

Shi Dan Ping kissed the little rabbit. He gripped her waist and he lifted her over his shoulder.

'Ah! Put me down,' Na Na said.

'Don't make a commotion,' Shi Dan Ping said. He hit the little rabbit's bottom. Within three steps he reached the bed and he tossed the little rabbit on the bed. He took off his clothes and he laid on top of the little rabbit's naked body. He bit the little rabbit's hot cheek. 'Be good, tonight is your wedding night with your husband.'

The scent from the lit candles were sweet as the atmosphere inside Shi Dan Ping's bedroom.

Na Na wrapped her arms around Shi Dan Ping's hot neck and she wrapped her legs around his waist. His manhood thrust deep inside her. She whimpered, he kissed her and his tongue wrestled with her tongue. She dug her fingernails on his shoulders and her thighs gripped his waist. The thrusts of his manhood were like rainwater flooding a storm drain.

End of Side Story Two

Related

Side Story Three

Side Story Three *Spoiler warning – PG rating*

Shi Dan Ping lived like a monk for too long and he lost control.

Shi Dan Ping gripped Na Na's waist. His thrusts were stronger than her heart pumping blood, it was sweet torture. Her moans echoed in the quiet room.

Na Na lifted her head over Shi Dan Ping's shoulder and she saw the reflection of their intertwined bodies in the mirror. His long body engulfed her petite body. His sweat glistened on his firm body. His thrusts were successively faster and harder. Her arms and legs clung onto his body like he was her lifebuoy in the middle of an ocean. Her body orgasmed and she screamed.

Shi Dan Ping felt the little rabbit's body trembled and relaxed. He gripped her waist, he thrust into the deepest part of her body and he ejaculated. In his mind was only the little rabbit's flushed face. He didn't know if on her face were tear drops or sweat, but he thought her face looked like a beautiful flower in the morning with dew drops on its petals.

It took a while for Na Na to regain her senses. She felt Shi Dan Ping's body was too heavy on top of her body and she felt a bit suffocated. She frowned and she spoke weakly. 'Get... off.'

Shi Dan Ping obliged the little rabbit's request and he propped the upper half of his body on his arms and elbows.

Na Na was too embarrassed to look at Shi Dan Ping's face. She looked over his shoulder and she spoke softly. 'Get... out.'

'Na Na, you wanted to give me a child. If I withdraw then how can the next generation of the Shi household be conceived?' Shi Dan Ping said.

'You!' Na Na said. She covered Shi Dan Ping's mouth. 'You only know how to speak nonsense.'

Shi Dan Ping licked the little rabbit's soft palm.

'No... let's rest a bit then we can continue later,' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping laughed. 'Na Na, when you give a reward you need to be sincere.'

Na Na was exhausted and she berated herself for delivering her meat straight to Shi Dan Ping's mouth. Of course he wouldn't spare her and happily eat her meat!

Na Na saw the desire in Shi Dan Ping's eyes and she shivered. She felt his manhood hardened and she was scared for her life. 'You... rest for a bit. If you overexert yourself it's not good for your body.'

Shi Dan Ping withdrew half-way and he thrust deep inside the little rabbit. 'Na Na, are you suspecting your husband's capabilities?'

'Ah! My husband is the most impressive... I'm scared my body can't survive-' Na Na said.

'Don't be scared,' Shi Dan Ping whispered. He spread the little rabbit's legs wide apart. 'Your husband's here with you. Let your husband water your garden. Your husband will keep you warm and help you maintain a beautiful garden.'

Na Na wanted to say to Shi Dan Ping – 'What garden? You carnivorous flower! Do you want to rip my body in half?'

Shi Dan Ping savoured the little rabbit's taste and he slowly thrust in and out of her. He kneaded the little rabbit's breasts then he licked and sucked her nipples. He felt the little rabbit's body tensed and relaxed.

After the flames completely consumed the candle wicks, Na Na's body surrendered and she slept.

Shi Dan Ping ejaculated inside the little rabbit. Then he hugged the little rabbit and he slept.

The following morning Shi Dan Ping and Na Na slept in passed sunrise.

The morning sunlight woke up Shi Dan Ping. He fumbled for his phone. He called the hospital and changed his and the little rabbit's day shift to a night shift. He hung up his phone and he went back to sleep.

Na Na woke up in the afternoon. Shi Dan Ping informed her she was going to work the night shift. He was lucky he changed their day shift to the night shift otherwise his face would be scratched off by her fingernails.

Na Na carefully inspected the lower half of her body. Between her legs were smeared with Shi Dan Ping's excess water. She got out of bed and she slowly walked to the bathroom.

Na Na showered and the warm water soothed her muscle aches. She looked at her body through the mirror and she recoiled. She saw a pale faced young girl who struggled to stand upright and her swollen eye bags.

Na Na silently cursed Shi Dan Ping – 'You carnivorous flower! You watered me all night like I was a flower pot!'

Na Na walked outside the bathroom and she saw a refreshed Shi Dan Ping sat on the sofa in the living room.

Shi Dan Ping saw the little rabbit and he put down his newspaper on the coffee table. 'Let's eat lunch at a restaurant. You're too tired from last night so don't cook today. We'll take away chicken legs for the little meatball on the way to the hospital.'

'What about my big brother?' Na Na asked.

'There is a restaurant next to the hospital. I ordered a few dishes for him and we can pick it pick them up later,' Shi Dan Ping said.

'Take away food aren't nutritious as home cooked meals. My big brother's body is still weak-' Na Na said.

'He'll be ok. Let's go. I reserved a table for us at a hotel restaurant,' Shi Dan Ping said.

Na Na remembered the fridge was empty and she reluctantly followed Shi Dan Ping to a hotel.

Na Hao and Na Yuan ate bland hospital food for breakfast.

Na Yuan was happy to eat with his daddy, but the hospital food wasn't appetizing. He ate a few mouthfuls and he put his spoon down.

Na Yuan waited for uncle and his little aunt to come to the hospital all morning, but he didn't see them until the afternoon. Before he could ask them why they were late they gave him a container of his favourite chicken legs, and his appetite returned. He ran outside with the container of chicken legs to share

with the aunty nurses.

Na Hao's eyes swept over the take away food and he smiled.

Na Na saw Na Hao's smile and she was flustered. She sat on the bed next to Na Hao.

'Doctor Shi, can I inconvenience you to wash some peaches? Little Yuan will want to eat peaches after lunch,' Na Hao said.

'Big brother, I'll wash the-' Na Na said.

Na Hao looked straight into Shi Dan Ping's eyes and he smiled. 'Little sister, stay here and feed me lunch.'

Shi Dan Ping reluctantly carried a bag of peaches outside Na Hao's room.

Na Na opened a container but Na Hao stopped her.

Na Hao sighed. 'I'm not hungry yet. The peaches were just an excuse. Little sister, confess. Are you truly happy living together with Doctor Shi?'

Na Na nodded her head. 'Big brother, you don't need to worry. I'm really happy.'

'I believe you're happy now. What I want to know is do you think in the future you'll still be happy living together with him?' Na Hao said.

'Who can predict the future? People can change and I can't be certain I'll be happy in the future like I am now,' Na Na said.

Na Hao rubbed his little sister's head. 'Little sister, you're all grown up.'

'Big brother... you don't like Doctor Shi?' Na Na asked.

'My precious darling little sister who I loved and doted on since you were a baby. How can I be at peace marrying you off to him... you'll be like a mule slaving away to please him?' Na Hao said.

'Big brother, I know you're worried I'll be hurt. But eventually I'll start my own family. Doctor Shi treats me good and he saved your life-' Na Na said.

Na Hao scoffed. 'Exactly! He's my savior. I owe him my life and I have no way of repaying him except selling my little sister off to him like back in an ancient dynasty period.'

‘Big brother, what are you saying? Doctor Shi isn’t from an ancient-’ Na Na said.

‘He looks like he is! He looks like a bad person! A cannibal! He’ll swallow people whole even skin and bones! Little sister, think about it carefully. There are many good men,’ Na Hao said.

‘Big brother! I love Doctor Shi. He’s a good man!’ Na Na said.

Na Hao sighed and he didn’t know what else to say to dissuade his little sister.

Shi Dan Ping’s ear was pressed against his older brother-in-law’s hospital room door. He thought his older brother-in-law was a bit hateful, but he was pleased the little rabbit’s love declaration defeated his older brother-in-law’s insults.

End of Side Story Three

Related

Side Story Four

Side Story Four

Na Hao wasn't satisfied with his younger brother-in-law.

Na Hao didn't want to marry off his precious little sister early... but the black belly Shi Dan Ping tied his hands too fast!

Na Hao couldn't believe Shi Dan Ping dared to knock up his little sister before he gave his blessing for Shi Dan Ping to marry his little sister.

Na Hao wanted to discipline Shi Dan Ping before he would agree to give his blessing, but the rice was cooked. He didn't want his little sister to be burden with the title 'she was cooked before marriage' and he reluctantly gave his blessing.

Na Hao knew that a love child in the modern era wasn't as tabooed as the past, but he wanted to protect his little sister's reputation and he didn't want anyone to talk bad about his little sister.

There was no evil father-in-law or mother-in-law in Shi Dan Ping's life, but his older brother-in-law was hard to deal with. If he didn't get the little rabbit pregnant then his older brother-in-law wouldn't agree to the little rabbit marrying him.

What was outside Shi Dan Ping's plan was the little meatball was excited about the little rabbit's pregnancy. The little meatball thought a baby girl cousin was going to be born soon so the little meatball fussed over his and the little rabbit's unborn child, which meant he was the fourth most important person in the little meatball's heart.

Na Hao was sick of Shi Dan Ping's smugness from the tip of Shi Dan Ping's head to Shi Dan Ping's toes. Na Hao thought if Shi Dan Ping had wings he would fly circles above him.

'Doctor Shi, the hospital is a high pressure environment. I think it's best if my little sister and little Yuan comes home to live with me while I'm recovering,' Na Hao said.

Shi Dan Ping almost spat blood onto his older brother-in-law's smug face!

Na Na followed Na Hao and little Yuan home because she wanted to take care of Na Hao and little Yuan whilst it was hard for Na Hao to walk and stand for long periods.

Mrs Chen saw the Na siblings reunited and she cried joyful tears.

Na Hao stepped into his home. He felt everything was the same except it felt colder and lonelier than a year ago. He thought about his wife and his eyes stung.

Na Na wiped Mrs Chen's tears. 'Granny, what is there to cry about? My big brother is back and he's ok. Let's cook delicious dishes to welcome him home.'

'You two take a rest. I'll go cook,' Mrs Chen said.

Na Na couldn't refuse and she helped Na Hao to sit on a sofa.

Na Hao smiled at his little sister who was crying and his son. He promised himself that his home would be beautiful and lively again.

'Little sister, you're about to be a mum. What is there to cry about?' Na Hao said.

Na Na's cheeks turned pink. She rubbed her flat stomach and she smiled.

Na Hao sighed on the inside. He was happy and sad his little sister found her own happiness.

Shi Dan Ping was disgruntled his older brother-in-law separated him from his family. Each day he would drive to see the little rabbit and the little meatball after work. But his older brother-in-law wouldn't let him sleepover.

'Doctor Shi, you know too well the first trimester is important. It's best if you and my little sister sleep apart during the first trimester,' Na Hao said.

Shi Dan Ping quickly organised a beautiful wedding reception for the little rabbit at a classy hotel. His older brother-in-law insisted the wedding should be lively so he invited all of the little rabbit and his older brother-in-law's friends, neighbours and colleagues.

Shi Dan Ping thought nothing of his older brother-in-law's request, because he

could afford to invite as many guests to the wedding as his older brother-in-law wanted. But on his and the little rabbit's wedding day he realised his older brother-in-law was a black belly!

On Shi Dan Ping's and the little rabbit's wedding day the little rabbit couldn't drink and he drank his glass and her glass of champagne... their wedding reception venue was packed at maximum capacity and he was quickly drunk!

Na Hao stood on the sidelines and he laughed at his younger brother-in-law. He thought his little sister was pregnant with a baby boy. He gave his younger brother-in-law a you-shouldn't-use-my-nephew-to-blackmail-me look after each glass of champagne his younger brother-in-law drank.

Na Na felt helpless. She helped pour Shi Dan Ping a cup of tea after they toasted each table.

Shi Dan Ping's head ached but he smiled and he stroked the little rabbit's cheek.

Shi Huai Ren had no sympathy for his black belly son. He sat on the table reserved for the groom's family members and he enjoyed the lively atmosphere.

Shi Dan An pitied her big brother. She picked up a bottle of champagne and she brought it to the table her big brother and Na Na were toasting.

'Go easy on my big brother. He can't disappoint my sister-in-law on their wedding night. Let me drink in my big brother and sister-in-law's stead,' Shi Dan An said.

Shi Dan An opened the bottle of champagne and she drank half the bottle.

Everyone at the table widened their eyes, they thought Shi Dan An was an impressive drinker... except there was always a cynic in every crowd.

'Hehe... are you certain the groom's little sister isn't drinking from a bottle of water?' the cynic asked.

Shi Dan Ping was drunk, but he hated seeing someone else pick on his little sister. He lifted the cynic's chin, grabbed the bottle from his little sister and he poured the rest of the champagne down the cynic's mouth.

'Anyone else wants a toast?' Shi Dan Ping asked.

‘Hehe... Doctor Shi, we’ve toasted enough. Let’s play a wedding game,’ a guest said.

Shi Dan An frowned. ‘I’ll play in my big brother and sister-in-law’s stead.’

The guests at the table challenged Shi Dan An to a duel and she defeated them without sweating.

The defeated guests regretted they couldn’t turn back time to train harder and defeat Shi Dan An.

Shi Dan Ping was grateful his little sister saved him. He hugged his little sister and he cheered.

Shi Dan An laughed. ‘Does anyone object for me to take my big brother and sister-in-law back to their hotel room to rest?’

The defeated guests didn’t dare to object the scary Shi siblings.

Na Na was eternally grateful toward Shi Dan An. Na Na thanked the guests and she went to look for little Yuan.

Na Na caught little Yuan eating too many desserts. She took little Yuan back to Na Hao, because she didn’t want little Yuan to get a stomach ache.

‘Big brother, why did you want to cause trouble for Doctor Shi?’ Na Na asked.

Na Hao wiped his son’s mouth with a tissue. ‘How can this count as causing trouble for the little boy? It’s my wedding gift to the little boy. After receiving my wedding gift the little boy understands in the future he shouldn’t dare to divorce!’

Na Na sighed. ‘Ok, big brother take care of little Yuan. I want to go check on him.’

‘Little sister, remember you’re married into the little boy’s household and you can’t always do what you please. But if you are unhappy, you will always have your big brother’s shoulders to lean on,’ Na Hao said.

Na Na couldn’t hold back and she cried. She was happy Na Hao attended hers and Shi Dan Ping’s wedding day. But she wished her parents were at the wedding too.

Na Hao wiped tears off his little sister's face. 'If the bride cries then she won't be pretty. Go find the groom, don't keep him waiting.'

Shi Dan Ping was thrown into a bath tub. He had no energy to get out of the bath tub so he slept inside the bath tub.

Na Na walked into a honeymoon suite. She found Shi Dan Ping asleep in the bath tub. She laughed and she changed out of her wedding dress. Then she poured warm water onto a towel and she cleaned his face and neck.

Na Na helped Shi Dan Ping lay on the bed. She took off his clothes and he mumbled 'wife' nonstop in his sleep.

Na Na smiled and she laid next to Shi Dan Ping on the bed. She kissed his forehead and she spoke softly. 'Husband.'

End of Side Story Four

Related

Side Story Five

Side Story Five

Shi Dan Ping regretted his honeymoon.

Shi Dan Ping's wife was pregnant and they couldn't enjoy their honeymoon as a husband and wife.

Nine months later Shi Dan Ping's wife gave birth to their first child, a little rascal. Their son cried nonstop and they couldn't enjoy the life of newlyweds.

Shi Dan Ping patiently waited until his son could sleep on his own.

Finally Shi Dan Ping thought he could enjoy sweet moments with his wife... but the little rabbit found a new hobby – blogging!

Na Na loved to blog about how to take care of babies and happy news about the hospital. She didn't expect her blog would attract many online fans. She was happy to blog a few entries every day.

Shi Dan Ping pulled his wife's computer plug and he carried his wife to their bed.

'Wait! I promised everyone I'll blog every day-' Na Na said.

Shi Dan Ping bit the little rabbit's lips. He tossed her phone under the bed and he took off her clothes. He laughed and he spoke in a husky voice. 'Every day? You don't need to. Whereas, we can do this every day.'

End of Story Five

The End

Related